

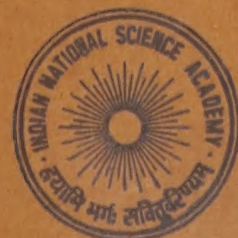
ISSN 0019-5588

# Indian Journal of Pure & Applied Mathematics

---

DEVOTED PRIMARILY TO ORIGINAL RESEARCH  
IN PURE AND APPLIED MATHEMATICS

VOLUME 19/8  
AUGUST 1988





# INDIAN JOURNAL OF PURE AND APPLIED MATHEMATICS

*Published monthly by the*

INDIAN NATIONAL SCIENCE ACADEMY

Editor of Publications

PROFESSOR D. V. S. JAIN

Department of Physical Chemistry, Panjab University  
Chandigarh 160 014

PROFESSOR J. K. GHOSH  
Indian Statistical Institute  
203, Barrackpore Trunk Road  
Calcutta 700 035

PROFESSOR A. S. GUPTA  
Department of Mathematics  
Indian Institute of Technology  
Kharagpur 721 302

PROFESSOR M. K. JAIN  
Department of Mathematics  
Indian Institute of Technology  
Hauz Khas  
New Delhi 110 016

PROFESSOR S. K. JOSHI  
Director  
National Physical Laboratory  
New Delhi 110 012

PROFESSOR V. KANNAN  
Dean, School of Mathematics &  
Computer/Information Sciences  
University of Hyderabad  
P O Central University  
Hyderabad 500 134

Assistant Executive Secretary  
(Associate Editor/Publications)

DR. M. DHARA

Subscriptions

For India, Pakistan, Sri Lanka, Nepal, Bangladesh and Burma, Contact :

Associate Editor, Indian National Science Academy, Bahadur Shah Zafar Marg,  
New Delhi 110002. Telephone : 3311865, Telex : 31-61835 INSA IN.

For other countries, Contact :

M/s J. C. Baltzer AG, Scientific Publishing Company, Wettsteinplatz 10, CH-4058 Basel,  
Switzerland, Telephone : 61-268925, Telex : 63475.

*The Journal is indexed in the Science Citation Index; Current Contents (Physical, Chemical & Earth Sciences); Mathematical Reviews; INSPEC Science Abstracts (Part A); as well as all the major abstracting services of the World.*

PROFESSOR N. MUKUNDA  
Centre for Theoretical Studies  
Indian Institute of Science  
Bangalore 560 012

DR. PREM NARAIN  
Director  
Indian Agricultural Statistics  
Research Institute, Library Avenue  
New Delhi 110 012

PROFESSOR I. B. S. PASSI  
Centre for advanced study in Mathematics  
Panjab University  
Chandigarh 160 014

PROFESSOR PHOOLAN PRASAD  
Department of Applied Mathematics  
Indian Institute of Science  
Bangalore 560 012

PROFESSOR M. S. RAGHUNATHAN  
Senior Professor of Mathematics  
Tata Institute of Fundamental Research  
Homi Bhabha Road  
Bombay 500 005

PROFESSOR T. N. SHOREY  
School of Mathematics  
Tata Institute of Fundamental Research  
Homi Bhabha Road  
Bombay 400 005

Assistant Editor  
SRI R. D. BHALLA



## FIXED AND PERIODIC POINTS UNDER SET-VALUED MAPPINGS

KALISHANKAR TIWARY

*Department of Mathematics, Vivekananda Mission College  
Chaitanyapur (Haldia) 721645, West Bengal*

AND

B. K. LAHIRI

*Department of Mathematics, Kalyani University, Kalyani 741235, West Bengal*

(Received 2 June 1987; after revision 23 October 1987)

In this paper we prove some theorems on fixed and periodic points of set-valued mappings in a metric space which are generalisations of some of the works of Edelstein [*J. Lond. Math. Soc.* 37 (1962), 74-79] and Ćirić [*Fund. Math.* 120 (1984), 223-28] on point-valued mappings.

### 1. INTRODUCTION

Let  $X$  be a metric space with metric  $d$  and  $B(X)$  be the family of all non-empty bounded subsets of  $X$ . A set-valued mapping  $F : X \rightarrow B(X)$  is said to have a fixed point  $z \in X$  if  $z \in Fz$  {(Nadler<sup>14</sup>, Kaulgud and Pai<sup>13</sup>)}. Using this definition, Kaulgud and Pai<sup>13</sup> have generalized a number of theorems of Kannan<sup>10-12</sup>, on point-valued mappings. Pursuing with this idea, Fisher<sup>7-9</sup> proved some results on fixed point and common fixed point of set-valued mappings which are generalizations of the results of Ćirić<sup>2</sup> and Fisher<sup>6</sup>.

If  $T : X \rightarrow X$  is a point-valued mapping, Edelstein<sup>5</sup> proved a fixed point theorem for a contractive operator and a periodic point theorem for a  $\epsilon$ -contractive operator, the latter result being recently generalised by Ćirić<sup>3</sup> using the concept of well-locally contractive operators. Ćirić<sup>3</sup> also showed that in addition to well locally contractive-ness if one assumes certain other hypothesis, then a periodic point turned out to be a fixed point. In this paper we attempt to generalize these theorems to set-valued mappings. It may be noted that the concept of  $(\epsilon, \lambda)$  uniformly local contractive-ness of Edelstein<sup>4</sup> has been generalised to set-valued mappings by Nadler<sup>14</sup>.

If  $A, B \in B(X)$  then to investigate the existence of fixed point for set-valued mappings, some authors used Hausdorff metric  $D(A, B)$  (Nadler<sup>14</sup>, Kaulgud and Pai<sup>3</sup>) while others used  $\delta(A, B) = \sup \{d(a, b) : a \in A, b \in B\}$  (Fisher<sup>7,9</sup>). Here we adhere to the Hausdorff metric  $D(A, B)$  because use of the distance  $\delta(A, B)$  becomes ineffective in our cases as it appeared to be applicable only to isolated sets, a very special



case. A mapping  $f: X \rightarrow X$  is called contractive<sup>5</sup> if  $d[f(p), f(q)] < d(p, q)$  for all  $p, q \in X$ ,  $p \neq q$  and  $\epsilon$ -contractive<sup>5</sup> if there exists  $\epsilon > 0$  such that  $d[f(p), f(q)] < \epsilon$  for all  $p, q \in X$ ,  $p \neq q$  and whenever  $d(p, q) < \epsilon$ .

A mapping  $f: X \rightarrow X$  is called well locally contractive<sup>3</sup> if for each  $u \in X$  there exists a sphere  $S(u, r(u))$  such that  $x, y \in S(u, r(u))$  with  $x \neq y$  implies

$$d(Tx, Ty) < d(x, y) \text{ and } Tx, Ty \in S(v, r(v))$$

for some  $v \in X$ .

Let  $\{A_n\}$ ,  $n = 1, 2, 3, \dots$  be a sequence of non-empty subsets of  $X$ . The sequence  $\{A_n\}$  is said to converge<sup>8</sup> to the subset  $A$  of  $X$  if (i) each point  $a$  in  $A$  is the limit of a convergent sequence  $\{a_n\}$ , where  $a_n \in A_n$  for  $n = 1, 2, 3, \dots$  (ii) for arbitrary  $\epsilon > 0$ , there exists an integer  $N$  such that  $A_n \subset A(\epsilon)$  for  $n > N$ , where  $A(\epsilon)$  denotes the set of all points  $x$  in  $X$  for which there exists a point  $a$  in  $A$ , depending on  $X$ , such that  $d(x, a) < \epsilon$ . The set  $A$  is then said to be the limit of the sequence  $\{A_n\}$ .

The mapping  $F: X \rightarrow B(X)$  is said to be continuous<sup>8</sup> at  $x \in X$  if whenever  $\{x_n\}$  is a sequence of points in  $X$  converging to  $x$ , the sequence  $\{Fx_n\}$  in  $B(X)$  converges to  $Fx$  in  $B(X)$ . We say that  $F$  is a continuous mapping of  $X$  into  $B(X)$  if it is continuous at each point  $x$  in  $X$ . The symbol  $\text{Cpt}(X)$  will stand for the family of all non-empty compact subsets of  $X$ .

## 2. LEMMAS

**Lemma 1**—Let  $F: X \rightarrow B(X)$  be such that  $D(Fx, Fy) < d(x, y)$ ,  $x, y \in X$ ,  $x \neq y$ . Then  $F$  is continuous.

**PROOF** : Let  $x_n \rightarrow x$ . We may clearly suppose that  $x_n \neq x$  for all large  $n$ . Let  $\epsilon > 0$  be arbitrary. There exists a positive integer  $N$  such that

$$D(Fx_n, Fx) < d(x_n, x) < \epsilon \text{ for } n > N.$$

So,  $Fx_n \subset Fx(\epsilon)$  and also  $Fx \subset Fx_n(\epsilon)$  for  $n > N$  and this shows that  $Fx_n \rightarrow Fx$  as  $n \rightarrow \infty$  and the proof is complete.

**Lemma 2**—If  $\{A_n\}$  and  $\{B_n\}$  are sequences from  $B(X)$  which converge respectively to the sets  $A$  and  $B \in B(X)$  then the sequence  $\{D(A_n, B_n)\}$  converges to  $D(A, B)$ .

**PROOF** : Let  $\epsilon > 0$  be arbitrary. There exists a positive integer  $N$  such that

$$D(A_n, A) < \epsilon/2 \text{ and } D(B_n, B) < \epsilon/2 \text{ for } n > N.$$

By using the triangle inequality, we see that

$$|D(A_n, B_n) - D(A, B)| \leq D(A_n, A) + D(B_n, B)$$

and the proof follows.

**Lemma 3**—If  $x_0 \in X$  then  $x_n \in Fx_{n-1}$ ,  $n = 1, 2, \dots$  can be so selected that

$$d(x_n, x_{n+1}) \leq D(Fx_{n-1}, Fx_n)$$



where  $F: X \rightarrow \text{Cpt}(X)$ .

PROOF : Let  $x_0 \in X$  and  $x_1 \in Fx_0$ . Then by Nadler<sup>14</sup>, there exists  $x_2 \in Fx_1$  such that

$$d(x_1, x_2) \leq D(Fx_0, Fx_1).$$

Since  $x_2 \in Fx_1$ , there exists in the same way an element  $x_3 \in Fx_2$  such that

$$d(x_2, x_3) \leq D(Fx_1, Fx_2)$$

and in this way we can find a sequence  $\{x_n\}$  in  $X$  such that

$$d(x_n, x_{n+1}) \leq D(Fx_{n-1}, Fx_n), \quad n = 1, 2, 3, \dots$$

where  $x_n \in Fx_{n-1}$  and the proof is complete.

### 3. FIXED POINT THEOREM

*Theorem 1*—Let  $F: X \rightarrow \text{Cpt}(X)$  be such that

$$D(Fx, Fy) < d(x, y); \quad x, y \in X; \quad x \neq y. \quad \dots(1)$$

If the sequence  $\{x_n\}$  of Lemma 3 has a convergent subsequence  $\{x_{n_i}\}$  say, then there exists a fixed point of  $F$ .

PROOF : If  $x_n = x_{n+1}$  for some  $n$  then  $x_{n+1} \in Fx_n$  implies  $x_n \in Fx_n$  and hence there is a fixed point. So we suppose that  $x_n \neq x_{n+1}$  for any value of  $n$  and we show that  $\xi = \lim_{i \rightarrow \infty} x_{n_i} \in F\xi$ .

If possible, suppose that  $\xi \notin F\xi$ . Let  $Y$  be the subset of  $X \times X$  defined by

$$Y = X \times X - \Delta$$

where  $\Delta = \{(x, y) \in X \times X : x = y\}$ . We define a real-valued function of two variables on  $Y$  by

$$f(p, q) = \frac{D[Fp, Fq]}{d(p, q)}, \quad (p, q) \in Y. \quad \dots(2)$$

Using Lemmas 1 and 2 we easily see that  $f(p, q)$  is continuous on  $Y$ . Since  $\xi \notin F\xi$  and  $F\xi \in \text{Cpt}(X)$ ,  $d(\xi, F\xi) > 0$ .

Since  $x_{n_i+1} \in Fx_{n_i}$ , by Nadler<sup>14</sup> there exists an element  $\eta \in F\xi$  such that

$$d(x_{n_i+1}, \eta) \leq D(Fx_{n_i}, F\xi) < d(x_{n_i}, \xi) \rightarrow 0 \text{ as } i \rightarrow \infty$$

if  $x_{n_i} \neq \xi$  for all large  $i$ . If, however,  $x_{n_i} = \xi$  for all large  $i$ , then  $x_{n_i+1} \in Fx_{n_i} = F\xi$  and because  $F\xi$  is compact, there exists a subsequence of  $\{x_{n_i+1}\}$  which converges to a point of  $F\xi$ . In this case we take  $\eta$  to be this point. Without loss of generality, we







Let  $G_2$  be the collection of all such points  $u \in Fx_2$  for which (6) holds. Clearly  $G_2$  is compact and so we can find an element  $u_1 \in G_2$  such that

$$d(x_1, u_1) \leq D(Fx_0, G_2).$$

Let  $Fx_0 = G_0$ . If  $D(G_0, G_2) \leq D(Fx_0, Fx_2)$  then it may be verified that the distance between any two points of  $x_1, x_2, u_1 (= x_3, \text{ say})$  does not exceed the Hausdorff distance between the corresponding sets  $Fx_0, Fx_1, Fx_2$ .

Since  $Fx_3$  is compact, there exists an element  $v \in Fx_3$  such that

$$d(x_3, v) \leq D(Fx_2, Fx_3). \quad \dots(7)$$

Let  $G_3$  be the collection of all such points  $v \in Fx_3$  for which (7) holds. Since, as may be seen,  $G_3$  is compact, there exists an element  $v_1 \in G_3$  such that

$$d(x_1, v_1) \leq D(G_0, G_3). \quad \dots(8)$$

Let  $G_3^1$  be the collection of all such points  $v_1 \in G_3$  for which (8) holds. By similar reasonings, there exists an element  $v_2 \in G_3^1$  such that

$$d(x_2, v_2) \leq D(Fx_1, G_3^1) = D(G_1, G_3^1)$$

where  $Fx_1 = G_1$ , say. If  $D(G_0, G_3) \leq D(Fx_0, Fx_3)$  and  $D(G_1, G_3^1) \leq D(Fx_1, Fx_3)$  then it may be seen that the distance between any two points of  $x_1, x_2, x_3, v_2 (= x_4, \text{ say})$  does not exceed the Hausdorff distance between the corresponding sets  $Fx_0, Fx_1, Fx_2, Fx_3$ .

Proceeding in this way if we suppose that  $D(G_i, G_j) \leq D(Fx_i, Fx_j)$ ,  $i = 0, j = 1, 2, \dots$  and  $D(G_i, G_j^1) \leq D(Fx_i, Fx_j)$ , ...

...(A)

$i = 1, 2, 3, \dots, j = 3, 4, \dots$  and  $i < j$ , then we can construct a sequence  $\{x_n\}$  such that  $x_n \in Fx_{n-1}$  and

$$d(x_k, x_s) \leq D(Fx_{k-1}, Fx_{s-1}), k \neq s = 1, 2, \dots \quad \dots(B)$$

*Note 1:* It may be noted that for a point-valued mapping  $F$  the relation (A) holds automatically.

We now introduce the following definitions.

*Definition 1*—A mapping  $F: X \rightarrow B(X)$  is said to satisfy condition (C) if for each  $u \in X$  there exists an open sphere  $S(u, r(u))$  such that  $x, y \in S(u, r(u))$  with  $x \neq y$  implies  $D(Fx, Fy) < d(x, y)$  and  $Fx, Fy \subset S(v, r(v))$  for some  $v \in X$ .

*Definition 2*—Let  $u \in X$  and let  $u_k \in F u_{k-1}$ ,  $u_0 = u$ . Then  $u$  is said to be a periodic point of  $F$  if  $u \in F u_{k-1}$  for some  $k \geq 1$ .

For  $k = 1$ ,  $u$  is fixed point of  $F$ .

*Theorem 2*—Let  $F: X \rightarrow \text{Cpt}(X)$  satisfy condition (C) and suppose that a sequence



$\{x_n\}$  has been constructed satisfying (B). If  $\{x_n\}$  has a convergent subsequence  $\{x_{n_i}\}$  then  $F$  has a periodic point.

PROOF : If for some  $n$  and  $k$ ,  $x_n = x_{n+k}$  then  $x_n = x_{n+k} \in Fx_{n+k-1}$  and hence the theorem is obtained. So we suppose that  $x_n \neq x_{n+k}$  for any  $n$  and  $k$ . Let  $u = \lim_{i \rightarrow \infty} x_{n_i}$ . We show that  $u$  is a periodic point of  $F$ . Because of the preceding remark, we may assume that  $x_{n_i} \neq u$  for all large  $i$ . If possible, suppose that  $u$  is not a periodic point of  $F$ , i. e.,  $u \notin Fu_{k-1}$  for any  $k \geq 1$ , where  $u_{k-1} \in Fu_{k-2}$  and  $u_0 = u$ .

Since  $F$  satisfies condition (C) and  $x_{n_i+1} \in Fx_{n_i}$ , by (Nadler<sup>14</sup>) there exists a point  $u_1 \in Fu$  such that

$$d(x_{n_i+1}, u_1) \leq D(Fx_{n_i}, Fu) < d(x_{n_i}, u)$$

and  $Fx_{n_i}, Fu \subset S(v, r(v))$  for some  $v \in X$ . Again as  $x_{n_i+2} \in Fx_{n_i+1}$ , there exists a point  $u_2 \in Fu_1$  such that

$$d(x_{n_i+2}, u_2) \leq D(Fx_{n_i+1}, Fu_1) < d(x_{n_i+1}, u_1)$$

and  $Fx_{n_i+1}, Fu_1 \subset S(w, r(w))$  for some  $w \in X$ . By the way of induction we can find an element  $u_k \in Fu_{k-1}$  such that

$$d(x_{n_i+k}, u_k) \leq D(Fx_{n_i+k-1}, Fu_{k-1}) < d(x_{n_i+k-1}, u_{k-1}) < \dots < d(x_{n_i}, u)$$

for all large  $i$ ,

This gives that

$$\lim_{i \rightarrow \infty} d(x_{n_i+k}, u_k) = 0, \text{ for } k = 1, 2, 3, \dots \quad \dots(9)$$

Since  $\lim_{i \rightarrow \infty} x_{n_i} = u$ , we select two positive integers  $p$  and  $k$  such that

$$x_p, x_{p+k} \in S(u, r(u)) \text{ and } d(x_p, x_{p+k}) < \frac{1}{3} r(u). \quad \dots(10)$$

Since  $F$  satisfies condition (C), for  $n = p + 1$  we have

$$\begin{aligned} d(x_n, x_{n+k}) &= d(x_{p+1}, x_{p+k+1}) \leq D(Fx_p, Fx_{p+k}) \\ &< d(x_p, x_{p+k}) \text{ and } Fx_p, Fx_{p+k} \subset S(g, r(g)) \end{aligned}$$

for some  $g \in X$ . So,  $x_{p+1}, x_{p+k+1} \in S(g, r(g))$  and this implies that

$$d(x_{p+2}, x_{p+k+2}) \leq D(Fx_{p+1}, Fx_{p+k+1}) < d(x_{p+1}, x_{p+k+1})$$

and  $Fx_{p+1}, Fx_{p+k+1} \subset S(h, r(h))$  for some  $h \in X$  and so

$$d(x_n, x_{n+k}) < d(x_p, x_{p+k}) \text{ for } n = p + 2.$$

By induction we can show that (10) implies

$$d(x_n, x_{n+k}) < d(x_p, x_{p+k}) \text{ for } n > p \quad \dots(11)$$



and so

$$d(x_{n_i}, x_{n_i+k}) < d(x_p, x_{p+k}) \text{ for } n_i > p.$$

Passing on limit as  $i \rightarrow \infty$ , we have using (9)

$$d(u, u_k) \leq d(x_p, x_{p+k}),$$

i. e.,  $d(u, u_k) < \frac{1}{3} r(u)$  and this implies that  $u_k \in S(u, \frac{1}{3} r(u))$ .

Since  $u \notin Fu_{k-1}$  and  $u_k \in Fu_{k-1}$ , we have  $u \neq u_k$ . Then

$$\begin{aligned} d(u_1, u_{k+1}) &\leq d(u_1, x_{n_i+1}) + d(x_{n_i+1}, x_{n_i+k+1}) + d(x_{n_i+k+1}, u_{k+1}) \\ &\leq D(Fu, Fx_{n_i}) + D(Fx_{n_i}, Fx_{n_i+k}) + D(Fx_{n_i+k}, Fu_k) \\ &\leq D(Fu, Fx_{n_i}) + D(Fx_{n_i}, Fu) + D(Fu, Fu_k) \\ &\quad + D(Fu_k, Fx_{n_i+k}) + D(Fx_{n_i+k}, Fu_k) \\ &< d(u, x_{n_i}) + d(x_{n_i}, u) + D(Fu_1, Fu_k) \\ &\quad + d(u_k, x_{n_i+k}) + d(x_{n_i+k}, u_k) \text{ for all large } i. \end{aligned}$$

Passing on limit as  $i \rightarrow \infty$ , we obtain from (9)

$$\begin{aligned} d(u_1, u_{k+1}) &\leq D(Fu, Fu_k) \\ &< d(u, u_k) \end{aligned}$$

and  $Fu, Fu_k \subset S(f, r(f))$  for some  $f \in X$ . Similarly

$$d(u_2, u_{k+2}) < d(u, u_k)$$

and by induction we can show that

$$d(u_n, u_{n+k}) < d(u, u_k) \text{ for all } n. \quad \dots(12)$$

We now show that  $x_n \in S(u, \frac{1}{3} r(u))$  for  $n > p$  implies

$$x_{n+k}, x_{n+2k} \in S(u, r(u)) \text{ for } n > p. \quad \dots(13)$$

By (11) we have  $d(u, x_{n+k}) \leq d(u, x_n) + d(x_n, x_{n+k})$

$$< \frac{1}{3} r(u) + d(x_p, x_{p+k}) \text{ for } n > p,$$

and

$$\begin{aligned} d(u, x_{n+2k}) &\leq d(u, x_{n+k}) + d(x_{n+k}, x_{n+2k}) \\ &< d(u, x_{n+k}) + d(x_p, x_{p+k}) \text{ for } n > p. \end{aligned}$$



Hence as  $d(x_p, x_{p+k}) < 1/3 r(u)$ , we obtain that

$$d(u, x_{n+k}) < 2/3 r(u); \quad d(u, x_{n+2k}) < r(u).$$

Thus (13) is proved.

Now as  $\lim_{i \rightarrow \infty} x_{n_i} = u$ , we may clearly suppose that  $n_i > p$  and  $x_{n_i} \in S(u, 1/3 r(u))$ . Then by (13), for a fixed  $n_i$  we have  $x_{n_i+k}, x_{n_i+2k} \in S(u, r(u))$ . This implies, as (10) implies (11), that

$$d(x_n, x_{n+k}) < d(x_{n_i+k}, x_{n_i+2k}) \text{ for all } n > n_i + k.$$

Hence as  $d(u, u_k)$  is a limit point of  $\{d(x_n, x_{n+k})\}_{n=0}^{\infty}$

$$d(u, u_k) \leq d(x_{n_i+k}, x_{n_i+2k}).$$

Passing on limit as  $i \rightarrow \infty$ , we have

$$d(u, u_k) \leq d(u_k, u_{2k})$$

which contradicts (12) for  $n = k$ . This shows that  $u \in Fu_{k-1}$  for some  $k$  where  $u_0 = u$ . Hence  $u$  is a periodic point of  $F$  and this completes the proof of the theorem.

*Corollary 1<sup>5</sup>*—Let  $F: X \rightarrow \text{Cpt}(X)$  be such that  $D(Fx, Fy) < d(x, y)$ ,  $x, y \in X$ ,  $x \neq y$  and whenever  $d(x, y) < \epsilon$ ,  $\epsilon > 0$  and suppose that a sequence has been constructed satisfying (B). If  $\{x_n\}$  has a convergent subsequence  $\{x_{n_i}\}$  then  $F$  has a periodic point.

The Corollary is a generalisation of Edelstein's theorem on point valued mapping.

## 5. FIXED POINT FROM PERIODIC POINT

In this section we shall examine when a periodic point of a set valued mapping  $F$  satisfying the condition (C) is a fixed point of  $F$ . For this we require the notion of convexity in the sense of Menger<sup>1</sup>. A subset  $M$  of  $X$  is said to be convex if for every pair of points  $x, y \in M$  there exists a point  $z \in M$  such that  $d(x, y) = d(x, z) + d(z, y)$ . Menger's theorem<sup>1</sup> states that a convex and complete metric space contains together with  $x, y$  also a metric segment whose extremities are  $x$  and  $y$ ; in other words a subset isometric to an interval of length  $d(x, y)$ .

*Theorem 3*—Let  $X$  be a complete convex metric space and let  $F: X \rightarrow \text{Cpt}(X)$  satisfy condition (C). Let  $\{x_n\}$  be a sequence satisfying (B). If  $\{x_n\}$  has a convergent subsequence  $\{x_{n_i}\}$  then  $F$  has a fixed point.

**PROOF :** It follows from Theorem 2 that  $F$  has a periodic point, say  $u$  in  $X$ . We suppose that  $u$  is not a fixed point of  $F$ , i. e.,  $u \notin Fu$ . Since  $Fu$  is compact, there exists an element  $u_1 \in Fu$  such that

$$d(u, u_1) = \inf_{x \in Fu} d(u, x) > 0. \quad \dots(14)$$



Since  $X$  is complete and convex, by Menger's theorem<sup>1</sup> there exists a metric interval  $[u_1, u]$  with the end points  $u_1, u$  and isometric to an interval of length  $d(u_1, u)$  and so  $[u_1, u]$  is compact. Therefore there exists an  $\epsilon > 0$  such that for any  $x, y \in [u_1, u]$  with  $d(x, y) < \epsilon$ , there exists a sphere  $S(z, r(z))$ , say where  $x, y \in S(z, r(z))$  for some  $z \in [u_1, u]$ . We now take the metric interval

$$u_1 = x_0, x_1, x_2, \dots, x_{m-1}, x_m = u$$

with  $d(x_{j-1}, x_j) < \epsilon$  for  $j = 1, 2, \dots, m$

and

$$d(u_1, u) = \sum_{j=1}^m d(x_{j-1}, x_j). \quad \dots(15)$$

Since  $F$  satisfies condition (C),

$$D(Fx_{j-1}, Fx_j) < d(x_{j-1}, x_j), \quad j = 1, 2, \dots, m$$

and  $Fx_{j-1}, Fx_j \subset S(w, r(w))$  for some  $w \in X$ .

Starting from a point  $x_0^1 \in Fx_0$ , we obtain by using<sup>14</sup> successively the points  $x_r^1 \in Fx_r, r = 1, 2, \dots, m$  such that

$$d(x_{j-1}^1, x_j^1) \leq D(Fx_{j-1}, Fx_j), \quad j = 1, 2, \dots, m \quad \dots(16)$$

and  $x_j^1$  in  $Fx_j$  depends on the choice of  $x_{j-1}^1$  in  $Fx_{j-1}, j = 1, 2, \dots, m$ . Similarly, starting from a point  $x_0^2$  in  $Fx_0^1$ , we obtain the inequalities

$$d(x_{j-1}^2, x_j^2) \leq D(Fx_{j-1}^1, Fx_j^1) \quad \dots(17)$$

and  $x_j^2$  in  $Fx_j^1$  depends on the choice of  $x_{j-1}^2$  in  $Fx_{j-1}^1, j = 1, 2, \dots, m$ .

In the same way for a positive integer  $k > 2$  we can obtain a set of finite points

$$x_0^{k-1}, x_1^{k-1}, \dots, x_m^{k-1} \quad \dots(18)$$

respectively from

$$Fx_0^{k-2}, Fx_1^{k-2}, \dots, Fx_m^{k-2}$$

such that

$$d(x_{j-1}^{k-1}, x_j^{k-1}) \leq D(Fx_{j-1}^{k-2}, Fx_j^{k-2}) \quad \dots(19)$$



and  $x_j^{k-1}$  in  $Fx_j^{k-2}$  depends on the choice of  $x_{j-1}^{k-1}$  in  $Fx_{j-1}^{k-2}$ ,  $j = 1, 2, \dots, m$ . Since  $u$  is a periodic point, it follows that  $u \in Fx_0^{k-2}$  for some  $k > 2$ . In (18) we may therefore assume that  $u = x_0^{k-1}$ . Also, since  $u$  is a periodic point, it follows that  $u \in Fx_m^{k-1}$ . It is clear that  $u_1 \in Fx_0^{k-1} = Fu$  (since  $x_0^{k-1} = u$ ). Since  $u \in Fx_m^{k-1}$ , there exists a point  $x_{m-1}^k$  in  $Fx_{m-1}^{k-1}$  such that

$$d(u, x_{m-1}^k) \leq D(Fx_m^{k-1}, Fx_{m-1}^{k-1})$$

i. e.

$$d(x_m^k, x_{m-1}^k) \leq D(Fx_{m-1}^{k-1}, Fx_{m-1}^{k-1}), \text{ where } x_m^k = u,$$

Again since  $x_{m-1}^k$  is in  $Fx_{m-1}^{k-1}$ , there exists a point  $x_{m-2}^k$  in  $Fx_{m-2}^{k-1}$  such that

$$d(x_{m-1}^k, x_{m-2}^k) \leq D(Fx_{m-1}^{k-1}, Fx_{m-2}^{k-1})$$

and in this way there exists a point  $x_0^k$  in  $Fx_0^{k-1} (= Fu)$  such that

$$d(x_1^k, x_0^k) \leq D(Fx_1^{k-1}, Fx_0^{k-1}),$$

i.e. is short,

$$d(x_j^k, x_{j-1}^k) \leq D(Fx_j^{k-1}, Fx_{j-1}^{k-1}) \quad \dots(20)$$

and the choice of the point  $x_{j-1}^k$  in  $Fx_{j-1}^{k-1}$  depends on the choice of  $x_j^k$  in  $Fx_j^{k-1}$ ,  $j = 1, 2, \dots, m$ ;  $k > 2$ . Since  $x_0^k \in Fu$ ,

$$d(u, u_1) \leq d(u, x_0^k) \text{ by (14).}$$

So,

$$\begin{aligned} d(u_1, u) &= d(u, u_1) \leq d(u, x_0^k) = d(x_m^k, x_0^k) \\ &\leq d(x_m^k, x_{m-1}^k) + d(x_{m-1}^k, x_{m-2}^k) \dots + \end{aligned}$$

(equation continued on p. 727)



which is not possible. Thus we arrive at a contradiction and hence  $u \in Fu$ , i. e.,  $u$  is a fixed point of  $F$ . This completes the proof of the theorem.

## REFERENCES

1. L. H. Blumenthal, *Theory and Applications of Distance Geometry*. Oxford Clarendon Press 1952.
2. Lj. B. Ćirić, *Proc. Am. Math. Soc.* 45 (1974), 267-73.
3. Lj. B. Ćirić, *Fund. Math.* 120 (1984), 223-28.
4. M. Edelstein, *Proc. Am. Math. Soc.* 12 (1961), 7-10.
5. M. Edelstein, *J. Lond. Math. Soc.* 37 (1962), 74-79.
6. B. Fisher, *Proc. Am. Math. Soc.* 75 (1979), 321-25.
7. B. Fisher, *Fund. Math.* 112 (1981), 141-45.
8. B. Fisher, *Rostock. Math. Kolloq.* 18 (1981), 69-77.
9. B. Fisher, *Indian J. Math.* 25 (1983), 265-70.
10. R. Kannan, *Bull. Calcutta Math. Soc.* 60 (1968), 71-76.
11. R. Kannan, *Am. Math. Monthly* 76 (1969), 405-408.
12. R. Kannan, *Fund. Math.* 74 (1972), 181-87.
13. N. N. Kaulgud, and D. V. Pai, *Nieuw Arch. Wisk.* 23 (1975), 49-66.
14. S. B. Nadler (Jr), *Pacific J. Math.*, 30 (1969), 475-88.



## ON A GENERAL CLASS OF ABSTRACT FUNCTIONAL INTEGRODIFFERENTIAL EQUATIONS

M. B. DHAKNE AND B. G. PACHPATTE

*Department of Mathematics and Statistics, Marathwada University  
Aurangabad 431004, (Maharashtra)*

(Received 25 February 1987)

The aim of the present paper is to study the existence, uniqueness, stability, boundedness and asymptotic behavior of solutions of functional integro-differential equations of the more general type in a Banach space. The method of successive approximation, comparison theorems and integral inequality of the more general type are used to establish our results.

### 1. INTRODUCTION

Let  $X$  be a Banach space with norm  $\|\cdot\|$  and  $B(X)$  denotes the Banach space of all bounded linear maps on  $X$ , with the norm of uniform operator topology. Let  $R^+$  denote the non-negative real line,  $N$  denote the set of natural numbers and  $J_0 = [0, T]$ ,  $J = [-r, T]$ ,  $T > 0$ ,  $r > 0$  are constants. The sets of all continuous mappings from a topological space  $S$  into  $X$  and from a topological space  $S$  into  $R^+$  are denoted by  $C(S; X)$  and  $C(S; R^+)$  respectively. If  $S = [a, b]$ ,  $a < b$  then these sets are endowed with the uniform topology. We denote the uniform norm on  $C = C([-r, 0], X)$  by  $\|\cdot\|_0$ . If  $x \in C(J; X)$  and  $t \in J_0$  then  $x_t$  denotes the element of  $C$  given by  $x_t(\theta) = x(t + \theta)$  for  $\theta \in [-r, 0]$ . Consider the functional integrodifferential equation of the form

$$\left. \begin{aligned} x'(t) + A(t)x(t) &= f(t, x_t, \int_0^t k(t, s, x_s) ds), \quad t \in J_0 \\ x_0 &= \phi(t), \quad -r \leq t \leq 0 \end{aligned} \right\} \quad \dots(1.1)$$

in a Banach space  $X$  where  $\phi \in C$  is given,  $x : J \rightarrow X$ ,  $-A(t)$ , for each  $t \in J_0$ , is the infinitesimal generator of analytic semigroup,  $k : J_0 \times J_0 \times C \rightarrow X$  and  $f : J_0 \times C \times X \rightarrow X$  are continuous.

The equations of this type commonly come across in almost all phases of physics and other areas of applied mathematics, see Bellini-Morante<sup>1</sup>, Burch and Goldstein<sup>2</sup>, Friedman<sup>3</sup>, Nohel<sup>12</sup> and references listed therein. Many recent papers and monographs have dealt with the existence, uniqueness and other properties of solutions of special forms of eqn. (1.1)<sup>4-9, 14-16, 18, 19</sup>. Kartsatos and Parrott<sup>8</sup> have proved the existence of a unique strong solution of eqn. (1.1) when  $k = 0$  and for each  $t \in J_0$ ,  $A(t)$  is  $m$ -accretive operator, by using the method of lines. Heikkilä<sup>6</sup> has established the existence and



uniqueness of mild and strict solutions of the equation (1.1) when  $k = 0$  by using the method of successive approximation and comparison principle. In a series of papers Pachpatte<sup>14-16</sup> has established several interesting results regarding the boundedness, stability and asymptotic behaviour of the solutions of equations of the form (1.1) without functional arguments when  $A(t)$ , for each  $t \in R^+$ , is linear closed operator by assuming the existence of solutions and by using comparison principle and the integral inequality of the more general type given by Pachpatte<sup>13</sup>. In view of the general form of (1.1), the study of the problems of existence, uniqueness and other properties of the solutions of (1.1) are quite interesting and deserves special attention.

The main objective of the present paper is to study the existence, uniqueness, boundedness, stability and asymptotic behaviour of solutions of equation (1.1). The main tools employed in our analysis are based on the method of successive approximation, comparison theorems and the integral inequality recently established by Pachpatte<sup>13</sup>. In fact, our results in the present paper are motivated by the recent papers of Heikkilä<sup>5,6</sup> and Pachpatte<sup>14</sup>.

⇔ The paper is organised as follows.

In section 2, we set up preliminaries and give the statement of the main results, the proofs of which are contained in sections 3, 4 and 5. In section 6, we give some applications to illustrate some of our results established in sections 3, 4 and 5.

## 2. PRELIMINARIES AND STATEMENT OF RESULTS

Before proceeding to the statement of our main results, we shall set-forth some preliminaries from Heikkilä<sup>6</sup>, Pachpatte<sup>14</sup> and hypotheses that will be used in our subsequent discussion.

First, we shall study the following integral equation

$$x(t) = u(t) + \int_0^{t^+} U(t^+, s) [f(s, x_s, \int_0^s k(s, \tau, x_\tau) d\tau)] ds, \quad t \in J \quad \dots (2.1)$$

where  $u(t) \in C(J, X)$ ,  $t^+ = \max\{t, 0\}$  and  $U: J_0 \times J_0 \rightarrow B(X)$  is strongly continuous. i. e.  $(t, s) \rightarrow U(t, s)x$  is continuous for each  $x \in X$ . By virtue of The Uniform Boundedness Theorem, the constant  $M$  given by

$$M = \sup \{\|U(t, s)\| : 0 \leq s \leq t \leq T\} \quad \dots (2.2)$$

is finite. For  $x_1, x_2 \in C(J_0, R^+)$ , define  $x_1 \leq x_2$  if and only if  $x_1(t) \leq x_2(t)$ ,  $t \in J_0$ . Given  $k \in C(J_0 \times J_0 \times C, X)$ ,  $f \in C(J_0 \times C \times X, X)$  we define a mapping  $F$  on  $C(J, X)$  by

$$Fx(t) = \int_0^{t^+} U(t^+, s) f(s, x_s, \int_0^s k(s, \tau, x_\tau) d\tau) ds, \quad t \in J. \quad \dots (2.3)$$

Using this definition of  $F$ , the integral equation (2.1) can be expressed symbolically as

$$x = u + Fx. \quad \dots (2.4)$$



Let  $\{A(t) : t \in J_0\}$  be a family of closed linear operators from a dense subset of  $X$  into  $X$ . Suppose that

(C<sub>1</sub>) there exist  $\alpha \in (\frac{\pi}{2}, \pi)$  and  $K > 0$  such that  $[\lambda I + A(t)]^{-1}$  exists, belongs to  $B(X)$  and  $\|[\lambda I + A(t)]^{-1}\| \leq \frac{K}{|\lambda| + 1}$  whenever  $t \in J_0$  and  $\lambda$  is a complex number for which  $|\arg \lambda| \leq \alpha$  (Here  $I$  denotes the identity operator of  $X$ ).

(C<sub>2</sub>)  $t \rightarrow A(t)(As)^{-1}$  is, for each  $s \in J_0$  a uniformly Holder continuous mapping from  $J_0$  into  $B(X)$ , the Holder constant and exponent being independent of  $s \in J_0$ .

It is easy to observe that the operators— $A(t)$  form a parabolic family i. e.  $-A(t)$ , for each  $t \in J$ , is the infinitesimal generator of an analytic semigroup (see Laddas and Lakshmikantham<sup>9</sup>, p. 59, Remark 3. 1. 1). From above conditions (C<sub>1</sub>) and (C<sub>2</sub>), it follows that the evolution equation

$$u'(t) + A(t)u(t) = 0 \quad \dots (2.5)$$

has a unique fundamental solution  $U : J_0 \times J_0 \rightarrow B(X)$  and that for each  $x_0 \in X$  the mapping  $t \rightarrow U(t, 0)x_0$  is the unique solution of (2.5) with value  $x_0$  at  $t = 0$  (see Ladas and Lakshmikantham<sup>9</sup>, p. 60, Theorems 3.21). Now, the mapping  $u \in C(J, X)$  defined by

$$u(t) = U(t^+, 0)\phi(t^-) \text{ for } t \in J \quad \dots (2.6)$$

where  $t = \min\{t, 0\}$ , is the solution of (2.5) with the given  $\phi \in C$  as the initial mapping.

We need the following definitions in our subsequent discussion [see Hsikkila<sup>6</sup> p. 7 and 9), Lakshmikantham and Leela<sup>10</sup>, p. 21 and 49), Pachpatte (p. 339).

**Definition 1**—A solution of the integral equation

$$x(t) = U(t^+, 0)\phi(t^-) + \int_0^{t^+} U(t^+, s)[f(s, x_s, \int_0^s k(s, \tau, x_\tau) d\tau)] ds, \quad t \in J \quad \dots (2.7)$$

is called a mild solution of (1.1).

**Definition 2**—A continuous mapping  $x : J \rightarrow X$  is called a strict solution of (1.1) if  $x$  equals to  $\phi$  on  $[-r, 0]$  and is strongly continuously differentiable and satisfies (1.1) on  $(0, T]$ .

**Definition 3**—The solution  $x(t)$  of (1.1) is said to be exponentially asymptotically stable, if there exist positive constants  $Q$  and  $\beta$  such that the inequality

$$\|x_t\|_0 \leq Q \|\phi\|_0 e^{-\beta t}, \quad t \geq 0$$

holds for  $\|\phi\|_0$  sufficiently small.

**Definition 4**—The solution  $x(t)$  of (1.1) is said to be uniformly slowly growing if, and only if, for every  $\beta > 0$  there exists a constant  $Q$ , possibly depending on  $\beta$ , such that the inequality

$$\|x_t\|_0 \leq Q \|\phi\|_0 e^{\beta t}, \quad t \geq 0$$



holds for  $\|\phi\|_0 < \infty$ .

For our convenience we list the following hypotheses.

(H<sub>1</sub>) For  $(t, s, \psi), (t, s, \bar{\psi}) \in J_0 \times J_0 \times C$ ,

$$\|k(t, s, \psi) - k(t, s, \bar{\psi})\| \leq q(t, s, \|\psi - \bar{\psi}\|_0) \quad \dots(2.8)$$

where  $q \in C(J_0 \times J_0 \times R^+, R^+)$  and  $q(t, s, m)$  is nondecreasing in  $m \in R^+$ , for each  $(t, s) \in J_0 \times J_0$ .

(H<sub>2</sub>) For  $(t, \psi, y), (t, \bar{\psi}, \bar{y}) \in J_0 \times C \times X$

$$\|f(t, \psi, y) - f(t, \bar{\psi}, \bar{y})\| \leq p(t, \|\psi - \bar{\psi}\|_0, \|y - \bar{y}\|) \quad \dots(2.9)$$

where  $p \in C(J_0 \times R^+ \times R^+, R^+)$  and  $p(t, m_1, m_2)$  is nondecreasing in  $m_1, m_2 \in R^+$ , for each fixed  $t \in J_0$ .

(H<sub>3</sub>) For each  $h \in C(J_0, R^+)$ , the integral equation

$$w(t) = h(t) + M \int_0^t p(s, w(s), \int_0^s q(s, \tau, w(\tau)) d\tau) ds \quad \dots(2.10)$$

has a solution on  $J_0$ .

(H<sub>4</sub>) Assume that  $w(t) \equiv 0$  is the only solution of (2.10) with  $h(t) = 0$ .

(H<sub>5</sub>) For  $v \in C(J, X)$ ,  $t, s \in J_0$ ,  $\psi \in C$ ,  $y \in X$ ,

$$\|k(t, s, \psi)\| \leq q^*(t, s, \|\psi - v_s\|_0) \quad \dots(2.11)$$

$$\|f(t, \psi, y)\| \leq p^*(t, \|\psi - v_t\|_0, \|y\|) \quad \dots(2.12)$$

where  $q^* \in C(J_0 \times J_0 \times R^+, R^+)$ ,  $q^*(t, s, m)$  is nondecreasing in  $m \in R^+$ , for each  $(t, s) \in J_0 \times J_0$ ;  $p^* \in C(J_0 \times R^+ \times R^+, R^+)$ ,  $p^*(t, m_1, m_2)$  is nondecreasing in  $m_1, m_2 \in R^+$  for each fixed  $t \in J_0$  and for each  $h \in C(J_0, R^+)$ , the integral equation

$$w(t) = h(t) + M \int_0^t p^*(s, w(s), \int_0^s q^*(s, \tau, w(\tau)) d\tau) ds$$

has a solution on  $J_0$ .

(H<sub>6</sub>) For  $t, s \in R^+$ ,  $\|U(t, s)\| \leq M$ ,

where  $M$  is nonnegative constant.

(H<sub>7</sub>) For  $t, s \in R^+$ ,  $\psi \in C$ ,  $y \in X$

$$\|k(t, s, \psi)\| \leq L_1(s) \|\psi\|_0 \quad \dots(2.13)$$

$$\|f(t, \psi, y)\| \leq L_2(t) [\|\psi\|_0 + \|y\|] \quad \dots(2.14)$$

where  $L_1, L_2 \in C(R^+, R^+)$  and



$$\int_0^\infty L_1(s) ds < \infty, \int_0^\infty L_2(s) ds < \infty. \quad \dots(2.15)$$

(H<sub>8</sub>) For  $t, s \in R^+$ ,  $\beta > 0$ ,  $M \geq 0$ ,

$$\|U(t, s)\| \leq M e^{-\beta(t-2s)} \quad \dots(2.16)$$

(H<sub>9</sub>) For  $t, s \in R^+$ ,  $\beta > 0$ ,  $\psi \in C$ ,  $y \in X$ ,

$$\|k(t, s, \psi)\| \leq e^{-\beta(t-s)} L_1(s) \|\psi\|_0 \quad \dots(2.17)$$

$$\|f(t, \psi, y)\| \leq e^{-\beta t} L_2(t) [\|\psi\|_0 + \|y\|] \quad \dots(2.18)$$

where  $L_1, L_2 \in C(R^+, R^+)$  and (2.15) holds

(H<sub>10</sub>) For  $t, s \in R^+$ ,  $\beta > 0$ ,  $M \geq 0$ ,

$$\|U(t, s)\| \leq M e^{\beta(t-2s)} \quad \dots(2.19)$$

(H<sub>11</sub>) For  $t, s \in R^+$ ,  $\beta > 0$ ,  $\psi \in C$ ,  $y \in X$ ,

$$\|k(t, s, \psi)\| \leq e^{\beta(t-s)} L_1(s) \|\psi\|_0 \quad \dots(2.20)$$

$$\|f(t, \psi, y)\| \leq e^{\beta t} L_2(t) [\|\psi\|_0 + \|y\|] \quad \dots(2.21)$$

where  $L_1, L_2 \in C(R^+, R^+)$  and (2.15) holds.

We require the following integral inequality established by Pachpatte<sup>13</sup> to prove some of our results.

*Lemma 1* (see Pachpatte<sup>13</sup>, p. 758)—Let  $a(t)$ ,  $b(t)$  and  $c(t)$  be real-valued non-negative continuous functions defined on  $R^+$ , for which the inequality

$$c(t) \leq c_0 + \int_0^t a(s) c(s) ds + \int_0^t a(s) \left[ \int_0^s b(\tau) c(\tau) d\tau \right] ds,$$

holds for all  $t \in R^+$ , where  $c_0$  is a non-negative constant. Then

$$c(t) \leq c_0 \left[ 1 + \int_0^t a(s) \exp \left[ \int_0^s (a(\tau) + b(\tau)) d\tau \right] ds \right],$$

for all  $t \in R^+$ .

With these preparations we are now in a position to state our main results to be proved in this paper.

*Theorem 1*—Assume that the hypotheses (H<sub>1</sub>) — (H<sub>4</sub>) hold. Then for each  $u \in C(J, X)$ , the successive approximations defined by

$$x^{n+1} = u + Fx^n, \quad n \in N \quad \dots(2.22)$$

with any  $x^1 \in C(J, X)$  as the first approximation, converge on  $J$  uniformly to a unique solution of (2.1).



*Theorem 2*—In addition to the hypotheses of Theorem 1, if for  $v \in C(J, X)$ ,  $h \in C(J_0, R^+)$ ,

$$\|v_t - u_t - Fv_t\|_0 \leq h(t), \quad t \in J_0 \quad \dots(2.23)$$

is satisfied then

$$\|v_t - x_t\|_0 \leq w(t), \quad t \in J_0 \quad \dots(2.24)$$

where  $w(t)$  is the minimal solution of (2.10).

As an immediate consequence of Theorem 2, we have the following corollary.

*Corollary 1*—Suppose that the hypotheses of Theorem 1 hold. If  $x$  and  $\bar{x}$  are two solutions of (2.1) with given  $u$  and  $\bar{u} \in C(J, X)$  respectively then

$$\|x_t - \bar{x}_t\|_0 \leq w(t), \quad t \in J_0 \quad \dots(2.25)$$

where  $w$  is the minimal solution of (2.10) with  $h(t) = \|u_t - \bar{u}_t\|_0$ .

*Theorem 3*—Assume that the hypotheses  $(H_1) - (H_5)$  hold. Then

$$\|x_t - v_t\|_0 \leq z(t), \quad t \in J_0 \quad \dots(2.26)$$

where  $z(t)$  is the minimal solution of

$$z(t) = \|u_0 - v_0\|_0 + M \int_0^t p^*(s, z(s), \int_0^s q^*(s, \tau, z(\tau)) d\tau) ds. \quad \dots(2.27)$$

*Theorem 4*—Suppose that  $f$  depends on a parameter belonging to a nonempty set  $E$ , and the hypotheses of Theorem 1 for given  $\mu, \bar{\mu} \in E$  hold. If  $x$  and  $\bar{x}$  denote the corresponding solutions of (2.1) with the same  $u \in C(J, X)$  then

$$\|x_t - \bar{x}_t\|_0 \leq w(t), \quad t \in J_0 \quad \dots(2.28)$$

where  $w$  is the minimal solution of (2.10) with

$$\begin{aligned} h(t) = & M \int_0^t \|f(s, \bar{x}_s, \int_0^s k(s, \tau, \bar{x}_\tau) d\tau, \bar{\mu}) \\ & - f(s, \bar{x}_s, \int_0^s k(s, \tau, \bar{x}_\tau) d\tau, \mu)\| ds. \end{aligned} \quad \dots(2.29)$$

*Theorem 5*—Suppose that the hypotheses  $(H_1)$  and  $(H_2)$  hold, and the equation

$$\left. \begin{aligned} w'(t) &= Mp(t, w(t), \int_0^t q(t, s, w(s)) ds), \\ w(0) &= w_0 \end{aligned} \right\} \quad \dots(2.30)$$

has a solution on  $J_0$  for each  $w_0 \geq 0$ . Further suppose that  $w(t) = 0$  is the only solution of (2.30) with  $w_0 = 0$ . Then for each  $\phi \in C$ , the equation (1.1) has a unique mild solution  $x$  on  $J$ . Moreover,  $x$  depends continuously on  $\phi$ .

*Theorem 6*—Let  $E$  be a metric space. Suppose that  $f \in C(J_0 \times C \times X \times E, X)$  and the hypotheses of Theorem 5 hold for each fixed  $\mu \in E$ . Then the mild solution of (1.1) depends continuously on the parameter  $\mu$ .

*Theorem 7*—Let  $\{A(t) : t \in J_0\}$  be a family of operators in  $B(X)$  satisfying the conditions  $(C_1)$  and  $(C_2)$  and uniformly bounded over  $t \in J_0$ . Further suppose that the hypotheses of Theorem 5 hold. Then for each  $\phi \in C$  eqn. (1.1) has a unique strict solution on  $J$ .

*Remark 1* : We note that Kartsatos and Parrott<sup>7</sup> have established the unique strong solution of eqn. (1.1) when  $k = 0$  with assumptions that for each  $t \in J_0$ ,  $A(t)$  is  $m$ -accretive operator and  $f$  Lipschitzian like function by using different approach for evolution equations. Here our conditions on functions involved in (1.1) and the approach to the problem are different.

In the following theorems, we assume that solutions of eqn. (1.1) exist on  $[-r, \infty)$ .

*Theorem 8*—Let the hypotheses  $(H_6)$  and  $(H_7)$  be satisfied. Then any solution  $x(t)$  of (1.1) is bounded on  $[-r, \infty)$ .

*Theorem 9*—Let the hypotheses  $(H_8)$  and  $(H_9)$  be satisfied. Then any solution  $x(t)$  of (1.1) is exponentially asymptotically stable.

*Theorem 10*—Let the hypotheses  $(H_{10})$  and  $(H_{11})$  be satisfied. Then any solution  $x(t)$  of (1.1) is uniformly slowly growing.

*Remark 2* : It is to be noted that Pachpatte<sup>14</sup> has studied the problems of boundedness, stability, asymptotic behaviour and other properties of the solutions of (1.1) without functional arguments when for each  $t \in R^+$ ,  $A(t)$  is a linear closed operator. Here our conditions on functions involved in (1.1) and the approach to the problem are different.

### 3. PROOFS OF THEOREMS 1-4 AND COROLLARY 1

We first prepare a lemma which will be used for the proofs of Theorems 1-4.

*Lemma 2*—Let  $q(t, s, m) \in C(J_0 \times J_0 \times R^+, R^+)$  and  $p(t, m_1, m_2) \in C(J_0 \times R^+ \times R^+, R^+)$  and monotone nondecreasing in  $m$  for each  $(t, s) \in J_0 \times J_0$  and in  $m_1, m_2$  for each  $t \in J_0$  respectively. Suppose that the hypothesis  $(H_3)$  holds. Let  $h \in C(J_0, R^+)$  be given. Then eqn. (2.10) has a minimal solution  $w$ . If  $\{u^n\}$  is a sequence in  $C(J, X)$  such that  $u^n \rightarrow u$  uniformly on  $J$  and if for each  $t \in J_0$

$$\left. \begin{aligned} \|u_t^1\|_0 &\leq h(t) \\ \|u_t^{n+1}\|_0 &\leq h(t) + M \int_0^t p(s, \|u_s^n\|_0, \int_0^s q(s, \tau, \|u_\tau^n\|_0) d\tau) ds, n \in N \end{aligned} \right\} \dots(3.1)$$



then

$$\|u_t\|_0 \leq w(t), \quad t \in J_0. \quad \dots(3.2)$$

PROOF : In view of the hypothesis (H<sub>3</sub>), we see that the integral equation

$$z(t) = z_0 + M \int_0^t p(s, z(s), \int_0^s q(s, \tau, z(\tau)) d\tau) ds \quad \dots(3.3)$$

has a solution on  $J_0$  for each  $z_0 \in R^+$ . Define a sequence  $\{w_n\}$  inductively as

$$\left. \begin{aligned} w_1(t) &= h(t) \\ w_{n+1}(t) &= w_1(t) + M \int_0^t p(s, w_n(s), \int_0^s q(s, \tau, w_n(\tau)) d\tau) ds \end{aligned} \right\} \quad \dots(3.4)$$

$t \in J_0$  and  $n \in N$ . It is easy to observe that the sequence  $\{w_n\}$  is nondecreasing on  $J_0$  i. e.

$$w_n(t) \leq w_{n+1}(t), \text{ for all } t \in J_0, n \in N. \quad \dots(3.5)$$

From (3.4) and (3.5) we obtain

$$w_{n+1}(t) \leq w_1(t) + M \int_0^t p(s, w_{n+1}(s), \int_0^s q(s, \tau, w_{n+1}(\tau)) d\tau) ds \quad \dots(3.6)$$

for  $t \in J_0$  and  $n \in N$ . Choose  $z_0 > \max_{0 \leq t \leq T} w_1(t)$ . Using (3.3), (3.6) and modified version of comparison Theorem (see, Lemma 1, Pachpatte<sup>17</sup>) we get

$$w_{n+1}(t) \leq z(t), \quad t \in J_0 \text{ and } n \in N.$$

Thus, the sequence  $\{w_n\}$  is nondecreasing and bounded above by a function  $z(t)$ . Hence the sequence  $\{w_n\}$  converges uniformly on  $J_0$  and  $w(t) \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} w_n(t)$  is a solution of (2.10).

We now prove that the limit function  $w(t)$  is the minimal solution of (2.10). Let  $\bar{w}$  be any solution of (2.10). By induction, we can show that

$$w_n(t) \leq \bar{w}(t), \quad t \in J_0 \text{ and } n \in N. \quad \dots(3.7)$$

By taking limit in (3.7) as  $n \rightarrow \infty$  we get  $w(t) \leq \bar{w}(t)$ ,  $t \in J_0$  which implies the minimality of the solution  $w(t)$ .

Using (3.1) and the fact that  $w(t)$  is the minimal solution of (2.10), we obtain by induction that

$$\|u_t^n\|_0 \leq w(t), \quad t \in J_0 \text{ and } n \in N. \quad \dots(3.8)$$

Since  $u^n \rightarrow u$ ,  $u_t^n \rightarrow u_t$  we get (3.2) from (3.8) and the proof of the Lemma 2 is complete.

In order to prove Theorem 1, let  $x^1 \in C(J, X)$  be given. Using (2.3), (2.8) and (2.9) we obtain

$$\begin{aligned} & \|Fx(t) - F\bar{x}(t)\| \\ & \leq M \int_0^{t^+} p(s, \|x_s - \bar{x}_s\|, \int_0^s q(s, \tau, \|x_\tau - \bar{x}_\tau\|_0) d\tau) ds. \end{aligned} \quad \dots(3.9)$$

$t \in J$ , whenever  $x, \bar{x} \in C(J, X)$ , and  $t^+ = \max\{t, 0\}$ .

*Case 1*—Suppose  $t \geq r$ . Then for any  $\theta \in [-r, 0]$  we have  $t + \theta \geq 0$ . For such  $\theta$ 's, from (3.9), we have

$$\begin{aligned} & \|Fx(t + \theta) - F\bar{x}(t + \theta)\| \\ & \leq M \int_0^{t+\theta} p(s, \|x_s - \bar{x}_s\|_0, \int_0^s q(s, \tau, \|x_\tau - \bar{x}_\tau\|_0) d\tau) ds \\ & \leq M \int_0^t p(s, \|x_s - \bar{x}_s\|_0, \int_0^s q(s, \tau, \|x_\tau - \bar{x}_\tau\|_0) d\tau) ds \end{aligned}$$

which yields

$$\begin{aligned} & \|Fx_t - F\bar{x}_t\|_0 \\ & \leq M \int_0^t p(s, \|x_s - \bar{x}_s\|_0, \int_0^s q(s, \tau, \|x_\tau - \bar{x}_\tau\|_0) d\tau) ds \end{aligned} \quad \dots(3.10)$$

where  $Fx_t$  means  $(Fx)_t$ .

*Case 2*—Suppose  $0 \leq t < r$ . Then for all  $\theta \in [-r, -t]$  we have  $t + \theta < 0$ . For such  $\theta$ 's we observe that

$$\|Fx(t + \theta) - F\bar{x}(t + \theta)\| \leq 0. \quad \dots(3.11)$$

For  $\theta \in [-t, 0]$ ,  $t + \theta \geq 0$ . Then, from (3.9), we get as in Case 1.

$$\begin{aligned} & \|Fx(t + \theta) - F\bar{x}(t + \theta)\| \\ & \leq M \int_0^t p(s, \|x_s - \bar{x}_s\|, \int_0^s q(s, \tau, \|x_\tau - \bar{x}_\tau\|_0) d\tau) ds. \end{aligned} \quad \dots(3.12)$$

Thus, for every  $\theta \in [-r, 0]$ , ( $0 \leq t < r$ ) from (3.11) and (3.12) we have

$$\begin{aligned} & \|Fx(t + \theta) - F\bar{x}(t + \theta)\| \\ & \leq M \int_0^t p(s, \|x_s - \bar{x}_s\|_0, \int_0^s q(s, \tau, \|x_\tau - \bar{x}_\tau\|_0) d\tau) ds \end{aligned}$$



which implies

$$\begin{aligned} & \|Fx_t - F\bar{x}_t\|_0 \\ & \leq M \int_0^t p(s, \|x_s - \bar{x}_s\|_0, \int_0^s q(s, \tau, \|x_\tau - \bar{x}_\tau\|_0) d\tau) ds. \end{aligned} \quad \dots(3.13)$$

For every  $t \in J_0$ , from (3.10) and (3.13) we have

$$\begin{aligned} & \|Fx_t - F\bar{x}_t\|_0 \\ & \leq M \int_0^t p(s, \|x_s - \bar{x}_s\|_0, \int_0^s q(s, \tau, \|x_\tau - \bar{x}_\tau\|_0) d\tau) ds. \end{aligned} \quad \dots(3.14)$$

For each  $n \in N$  and  $t \in J_0$ , we have

$$\begin{aligned} & \|x_t^{n+1} - x_t^1\|_0 \\ & \leq \|u_t - x_t^1\|_0 + \|Fx_t^1\|_0 + \|Fx_{n_t} - Fx_t^1\|_0 \\ & \leq h(t) + M \int_0^t p(s, \|x_s^n - x_s^1\|_0, \int_0^s q(s, \tau, \|x_\tau^n - x_\tau^1\|_0) d\tau) ds \end{aligned} \quad \dots(3.15)$$

where

$$h(t) = \|u_t - x_t^1\|_0 + M \int_0^t \|f(s, x_s^1, \int_0^s k(s, \tau, x_\tau^1) d\tau)\| ds. \quad \dots(3.16)$$

Using monotone nondecreasing character of functions  $q$  and  $p$ , we obtain, from (3.15), by induction that

$$\|x_t^{n+1} - x_t^1\|_0 \leq w(t), \quad t \in J_0, n \in N \quad \dots(3.17)$$

where  $w$  is any solution of (2.10) with  $h$  is given by (3.16).

To prove the convergence of the sequence  $\{x^n\}$  on  $J$ , we define a sequence  $\{z_n\}$  inductively by

$$\begin{aligned} & z_1(t) = w(t) = \text{the minimal solution of (2.10)} \\ & \text{with } h \text{ given by (3.16),} \end{aligned}$$

and

$$z_{n+1}(t) = M \int_0^t p(s, z_n(s), \int_0^s q(s, \tau, z_n(\tau)) d\tau) ds. \quad \dots(3.18)$$

In view of (3.17), we claim that the inequality

$$\|x_t^{n+m} - x_t^m\|_0 \leq z_m(t) \quad \dots(3.19)$$

holds for  $m = 1, n \in N$  and  $t \in J_0$ . From (3.14) it follows that

$$\begin{aligned} & \|Fx_t^{n+m} - Fx_t^m\|_0 \\ & \leq M \int_0^t p(s, \|x_s^{n+m} - x_s^m\|_0, \int_0^s q(s, \tau, \|x_\tau^{n+m} - x_\tau^m\|) d\tau) ds \quad \dots(3.20) \end{aligned}$$

whenever  $m, n \in N$  and  $t \in J_0$ . By virtue of (3.20), we can easily verify by induction that (3.19) holds for all  $m, n \in N$  and  $t \in J_0$ . In particular, we have

$$\begin{aligned} & \|x^{n+m}(t + \theta) - x^m(t + \theta)\| \\ & \leq \|x_t^{n+m} - x_t^m\|_0 \leq z_m(t) \leq z_m(T). \quad \dots(3.21) \end{aligned}$$

for all  $n, m \in N$ ,  $\theta \in [-r, 0]$  and  $t \in J_0$ .

The sequence  $\{z_n\}$  of non-decreasing functions  $z_n$ , is nonincreasing and bounded below by zero function. Hence, it converges uniformly on  $J_0$  and the function  $z(t)$  is the solution of (2.10) with  $h(t) = 0$ . By hypothesis  $(H_4)$ ,  $z(t) = 0$  and from (3.21) we deduce that the sequence  $\{x^n\}$  converges uniformly on  $J$ . Thus,  $x(t) \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} x^n(t)$ ,  $t \in J$ , is continuous and a solution of (2.1) on  $J$ .

To prove the uniqueness, we suppose that  $x$  and  $\bar{x}$  are two solutions of (2.1) with the same  $u \in C(J, X)$ . Define a sequence  $\{v_n\}$  inductively by

$$v_1(t) = w(t), \text{ any solution of (2.10) with}$$

$$h(t) = h(0) = \sup \{\|x_t - \bar{x}_t\|_0 : t \in J_0\}$$

and

$$v_{n+1}(t) = M \int_0^t p(s, v_n(s), \int_0^s q(s, \tau, v_n(\tau)) d\tau) ds. \quad \dots(3.22)$$

Using (2.10) and (3.22) we get by induction

$$\|x_t - \bar{x}_t\|_0 \leq v_n(t), \quad t \in J_0, n \in N. \quad \dots(3.23)$$

The sequence  $\{v_n\}$  is nonincreasing and bounded below by zero function. Hence it converges uniformly on  $J_0$  and the function  $v(t) \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} v_n(t)$  is the solution of (2.10) with  $h(t) = 0$ . By virtue of the hypothesis  $(H_4)$ ,  $v(t) = 0$ ,  $t \in J_0$  and consequently from (3.23) we have  $x(t) = \bar{x}(t)$ ,  $t \in J_0$ . This completes the proof of Theorem 1.



Let  $\{x^n\}$  be the sequence of the successive approximations, with  $x^1 = u + Fv$  as the first approximation, converging to  $x$ . Define  $u^n = v - x^n$ ,  $n \in N$ . It is easy to see that  $u^n \rightarrow u = v - x$  uniformly on  $J$ . Using definitions of  $u^n$ ,  $x^1$ , (2.22), (2.23) and (3.14) we obtain

$$\|u_t^1\|_0 = \|v_t - u_t - Fv_t\|_0 \leq h(t),$$

and

$$\|u_t^{n+1}\|_0 \leq \|v_t - u_t - Fv_t\|_0 + \|Fv_t - Fx_t^n\|_0$$

$$\leq h(t) + M \int_0^t p(s, \|u_s^n\|_0, \int_0^s q(s, \tau, \|u_\tau^n\|_0) d\tau) ds.$$

Now an application of Lemma 2 yields

$$\|u\|_0 = \|v_t - x_t\|_0 \leq w(t), t \in J_0.$$

This completes the proof of Theorem 2.

If we choose  $v = \bar{x}$  then by Theorem 2 we get (2.25) and the proof of Corollary 1 is complete.

Let  $\{x^n\}$  be the sequence of the successive approximations, with  $x^1 = u$  as the first approximation, converging to  $x$ . Define  $u^n = x^n - v$ . Then, it follows that  $u^n \rightarrow u = x - v$  uniformly on  $J$ . Using definitions of  $u^n$ ,  $x^1$ , (2.3), (2.11), (2.12), (2.22) and (2.27) we have

$$\|u_t^1\|_0 = \|u_t - v_t\|_0$$

and

$$\begin{aligned} \|u_t^{n+1}\|_0 &\leq \|u_t - v_t\|_0 + M \int_0^t \|f(s, x_s^n, \int_0^s k(s, \tau, x_\tau^n) d\tau)\| ds \\ &\leq \|u_t - v_t\|_0 + M \int_0^t p^*(s, \|u_s^n\|_0, \int_0^s q^*(s, \tau, \|u_\tau^n\|_0) d\tau) ds. \end{aligned}$$

Now, applying Lemma 2 with  $h(t) = \|u_t - v_t\|_0$ , we obtain

$$\|u_t\|_0 = \|x_t - v_t\|_0 \leq z(t), t \in J_0,$$

and the proof of Theorem 3 is complete.

Let  $\{x^n\}$  denote the sequence of the successive approximations, with  $x^1 = u + F\bar{x}$  as the first approximation, converging to  $x$ . Define  $u^n = x^n - \bar{x}$ . Then  $u^n \rightarrow u = x - \bar{x}$  uniformly on  $J$ . Using definitions of  $u^n$ ,  $x^1$ , (2.4), (2.22), (2.29) and (3.14) we get

$$\|u_t^1\|_0 = 0$$

and

$$\begin{aligned}\|u_t^{n+1}\| &= \|u_t + Fx_t^n - F\bar{x}_t + F\bar{x}_t - \bar{x}_t\|_0 \\ &= \|Fx_t^n - F\bar{x}_t\|_0\end{aligned}$$

$$\leq h(t) + M \int_0^t p(s, \|u_s^n\|_0) \int_0^s q(s, \tau, \|u_\tau^n\|_0) d\tau ds.$$

Now, using Lemma 2, we get (2.28) and the proof of Theorem 4 is complete.

*Remark 3 :* It is important to note that the results established in Theorems 1-4 for solutions of (2.1) hold also for mild solutions of (1.1) when  $u$  and  $U$  in (2.1) are considered as the solution of (2.5) with given  $\phi \in C$  as the initial function and the fundamental solution of (2.5) respectively.

#### 4. PROOFS OF THEOREMS 5-7

Let  $\phi \in C$  be given. We observe that the hypotheses of Theorem 1 hold for  $k$  and  $f$ . Therefore the existence of the unique mild solution  $x$  of (1.1) on  $J$  is ensured.

Let  $\bar{x}$  be the mild solution of (1.1) on  $J$  corresponding to  $\bar{\phi} \in C$  as the initial mapping. If  $u$  and  $\bar{u}$  are the solutions of (2.5) corresponding to  $\phi$  and  $\bar{\phi} \in C$ , as the initial mappings respectively, then by using (2.6) and proceeding as in the proof of Theorem 1 we obtain

$$\|u_t - \bar{u}_t\|_0 \leq \|\phi - \bar{\phi}\|_0 + M \|\phi(0) - \bar{\phi}(0)\|. \quad \dots(4.1)$$

From (4.1) and corollary 1, we obtain

$$\|x_t - \bar{x}_t\|_0 \leq w(t) \leq w(T), \quad t \in J_0 \quad \dots(4.2)$$

where  $w(t)$  is the minimal solution of (2.30) with

$$w_0 = \|\phi - \bar{\phi}\|_0 + M \|\phi(0) - \bar{\phi}(0)\|.$$

It is easy to see that if  $\bar{\phi} \rightarrow \phi$  in  $C$ , then  $w_0 \rightarrow 0$  and, since the zero function is the only solution of (2.30) with  $w_0 = 0$  then

$$w(T) \rightarrow 0 \text{ as } \bar{\phi} \rightarrow \phi \quad \dots(4.3)$$



(see Walter<sup>20</sup>, Theorem VIII, p. 67). Therefore, from (4.2) and (4.3) we have  $\bar{x}(t) \rightarrow x(t)$  uniformly on  $J$  as  $\bar{\phi} \rightarrow \phi$ . This completes the proof of Theorem 5.

Let  $x$  and  $\bar{x}$  be the mild solutions of (1.1) corresponding to the same  $\phi \in C$  and  $\mu, \bar{\mu} \in E$  respectively. We see that the hypotheses of Theorem 4 are satisfied and hence we have

$$\|x_t - \bar{x}_t\|_0 \leq w(t) \leq w(T), \quad t \in J_0 \quad \dots(4.4)$$

where  $w(t)$  is the minimal solution of (2.10) with  $h(t)$  given by (2.29). Since the set  $\{(s, \bar{x}_s, \int_0^s k(s, \tau, \bar{x}_\tau) d\tau, \mu) : 0 \leq s \leq T\}$  is compact in the product space  $J_0 \times C \times X \times E$  and since  $f$  is continuous, it is easy to verify by elementary analysis (see Lang<sup>11</sup>, p. 34) that  $h(t)$  given by (2.29), tends to zero uniformly on  $J_0$  as  $\bar{\mu} \rightarrow \mu$  in  $E$ . Then it follows that

$$w(T) \rightarrow 0 \text{ as } \bar{\mu} \rightarrow \mu. \quad \dots(4.5)$$

From (4.4) and (4.5), we obtain  $\bar{x}(t) \rightarrow x(t)$  uniformly on  $J_0$  as  $\bar{\mu} \rightarrow \mu$ . This completes the proof of Theorem 6.

By an application of Theorem 5, eqn. (1.1) has a unique mild solution  $x$  on  $J$ . By virtue of Lemmas 3.5.1 and 3.5.2 of Ladas and Lakshmikantham<sup>9</sup> with  $u_0 = \phi(0)$  and  $f(t) = f(t, x_t, \int_0^t k(t, s, x_s) ds)$ , we can verify that  $x$  is also a strict solution of (1.1)

on  $J$ . Now, since  $x$  is a strict solution of (1.1), the mapping  $t \rightarrow f(t, x_t, \int_0^t k(t, s, x_s) ds)$  is continuous and so that  $x$  is also a mild solution of (1.1). (Lakshmikantham and Leela<sup>10</sup>, Vol. II, p. 250). Therefore the uniqueness of a strict solution  $x$  follows from Theorem 5. This completes the proof of Theorem 7.

## 5. PROOF OF THEOREMS 8-10

The solution of eqn. (1.1) on  $[-r, \infty)$  is given by

$$x(t) = U(t^+, 0) \phi(t^-) + \int_0^t U(t^+, s) f(s, x_s, \int_0^s k(s, \tau, x_\tau) d\tau) ds \quad \dots(5.1)$$

where  $t^+ = \max\{t, 0\}$  and  $t^- = \min\{t, 0\}$ . If  $t \geq 0$ , then from (5.1) and using (H<sub>0</sub>), (2.13), (2.14) we obtain

$$\|x(t)\| \leq M \|\phi\|_0 + \int_0^t M L_2(s) \|x_s\|_0 ds +$$

(equation continued on p. 742)

$$+ \int_0^t ML_2(s) \int_0^s L_1(\tau) \|x_\tau\|_0 d\tau ds. \quad \dots(5.2)$$

From (5.2) and by proceeding as in the proof of Theorem 1 we get

$$\begin{aligned} \|x_t\|_0 &\leq M \|\phi\|_0 + \int_0^t ML_2(s) \|x_s\|_0 ds \\ &\quad + \int_0^t ML_2(s) \int_0^s L_1(\tau) \|x_\tau\|_0 d\tau ds. \end{aligned} \quad \dots(5.3)$$

By an application of Lemma 1 we get from (5.3),

$$\|x_t\|_0 \leq M \|\phi\|_0 [1 + \int_0^t ML_2(s) \exp \left( \int_0^s \{ML_2(\tau) + L_1(\tau)\} d\tau \right) ds]. \quad \dots(5.4)$$

The boundedness of the solution  $x(t)$  of (1.1) on  $R^+$  follows from (5.4) and (2.15). Consequently, the solution  $x(t)$  of (1.1) is bounded on  $[-r, \infty)$  and proof of the Theorem 8 is complete.

*Remark 4:* We note that our result established in Theorem 8 also yield the stability of a solution  $x(t)$  of (1.1) if  $\|\phi\|_0$  is small enough.

If  $t \geq 0$  then using (5.1) and (2.16) — (2.18), we get

$$\begin{aligned} e^{\theta t} \|x(t)\| &\leq M \|\phi\|_0 + \int_0^t ML_2(s) e^{\theta s} \|x_s\|_0 ds \\ &\quad + \int_0^t ML_2(s) \int_0^s L_1(\tau) e^{\theta \tau} \|x_\tau\|_0 d\tau ds. \end{aligned} \quad \dots(5.5)$$

From (5.5) and by proceeding as in the proof of Theorem 1 we obtain

$$\begin{aligned} e^{\theta t} \|x_t\|_0 &\leq Me^{\theta r} \|\phi\|_0 + \int_0^t ML_2(s) e^{\theta s} \|x_s\|_0 ds \\ &\quad + \int_0^t ML_2(s) \int_0^s L_1(\tau) e^{\theta \tau} \|x_\tau\|_0 d\tau ds. \end{aligned} \quad \dots(5.6)$$

Applying Lemma 1 with  $c(t) = e^{\theta t} \|x_t\|_0$ , the inequality (5.6) yields

$$\begin{aligned} \|x_t\|_0 &\leq Me^{\theta r} \|\phi\|_0 [1 + \int_0^t ML_2(s) \\ &\quad \exp \left[ \int_0^s \{ML_2(\tau) + L_1(\tau)\} d\tau \right] ds] e^{-\theta t}. \end{aligned} \quad \dots(5.7)$$



From (5.7) and (2.15), it follows that

$$\|x_t\|_0 \leq Q \|\phi\|_0 e^{-\beta t}, \quad t \geq 0$$

where  $Q > 0$  is a constant. This proves that the solution  $x(t)$  of (1.1) is exponentially asymptotically stable and proof of the Theorem 9 is complete.

If  $t \geq 0$  then using (5.1) and (2.19) — (2.21), we get

$$\begin{aligned} e^{-\beta t} \|x(t)\| &\leq M \|\phi\|_0 + \int_0^t M L_2(s) e^{-\beta s} \|x_s\|_0 ds \\ &+ \int_0^t M L_2(s) \int_0^s L_1(\tau) e^{-\beta \tau} \|x_\tau\|_0 d\tau ds. \end{aligned} \quad \dots(5.8)$$

From (5.8) and by proceeding as in the proof of Theorem 1 we obtain

$$\begin{aligned} e^{-\beta t} \|x_t\|_0 &\leq M \|\phi\|_0 + \int_0^t M L_2(s) e^{-\beta s} \|x_s\|_0 ds \\ &+ \int_0^t M L_2(s) \int_0^s L_1(\tau) e^{-\beta \tau} \|x_\tau\|_0 d\tau ds. \end{aligned} \quad \dots(5.9)$$

Applying Lemma 1 with  $c(t) = e^{-\beta t} \|x_t\|_0$ , the inequality (5.9) yields

$$\begin{aligned} \|x_t\|_0 &\leq M \|\phi\|_0 \left[ 1 + \int_0^t M L_2(s) \right. \\ &\times \exp \left[ \int_0^s \{M L_2(\tau) + L_1(\tau)\} d\tau \right] ds \left. \right] e^{\beta t}. \end{aligned} \quad \dots(5.10)$$

From (5.10) and (2.15), it follows that

$$\|x_t\|_0 \leq Q \|\phi\|_0 e^{\beta t}, \quad t > 0$$

where  $Q > 0$  is a constant. This proves that the solution  $x(t)$  of (1.1) is uniformly slowly growing and proof of the Theorem 10 is complete.

## 6. APPLICATIONS

In order to illustrate the applications of some of our theorems established in previous sections, we consider the following partial functional integrodifferential equation

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{\partial z(x, t)}{\partial t} &= (a(x, t) z_x(x, t))_x \\ &= G(t, z(x, t-r), \int_0^t H(t, s, z(x, s-r)) ds), \\ 0 &\leq x \leq 1, \quad t \in J_0 \end{aligned} \quad \dots(6.1)$$

with initial-boundary conditions

$$z(0, t) = z(1, t) = 0, t \in J_0 \quad \dots(6.2)$$

$$z(x, t) = \phi(x, t), 0 \leq x \leq 1, -r \leq t \leq 0. \quad \dots(6.3)$$

The functions  $a$ ,  $H$  and  $G$  in (6.1) satisfy the following conditions :

(C<sub>1</sub>)  $a(x, t)$  is a positive continuous function defined on  $[0, 1] \times J_0$  having a continuous first partial derivative  $a_x(x, t)$  on  $[0, 1] \times J_0$  and satisfy

$$|a(x, t) - a(x, s)| \leq K |t - s|^\eta \quad \dots(6.4)$$

$$|a_x(x, t) - a_x(x, s)| \leq K |t - s|^\eta \quad \dots(6.5)$$

for all  $s, t \in J_0$ ,  $x \in [0, 1]$ , and  $0 < \eta < 1$

(C<sub>2</sub>)  $H: J_0 \times J_0 \times R \rightarrow R$  is continuous and satisfies

$$|H(t, s, v) - H(t, s, \bar{v})| \leq q(t, s, |v - \bar{v}|) \quad \dots(6.6)$$

for  $0 \leq s \leq t \leq T$  and  $v, \bar{v} \in R$  where  $q$  is defined as in Hypothesis (H<sub>1</sub>)

(C<sub>3</sub>)  $G: J_0 \times R \times R \rightarrow R$  is continuous and satisfies

$$\begin{aligned} & |G(t, v_1, v_2) - G(t, \bar{v}_1, \bar{v}_2)| \\ & \leq p(t, |v_1 - \bar{v}_1|, |v_2 - \bar{v}_2|) \end{aligned} \quad \dots(6.7)$$

for  $0 \leq t \leq T$  and  $v_1, v_2; \bar{v}_1, \bar{v}_2 \in R$  where  $p$  is defined as in Hypothesis (H<sub>2</sub>).

(C<sub>4</sub>) The functions  $q$  and  $p$  involved in (6.6) and (6.7) are such that the equation (2.30) has a solution on  $J_0$  for each  $w_0 \geq 0$  and  $w(t) = 0$  is the only solution of (2.30) with  $w_0 = 0$ .

Let  $X = C([0, 1], R)$  denote the Banach space with norm  $\|y\| = \max_{0 \leq x \leq 1} |y(x)|$ ,  $y \in X$ . Define an operator  $A: X \rightarrow X$  by

$$(A(t)u)(x) = -(a(x, t)z_x(x, t))_x$$

with domain  $D(A)$  defined as  $D(A) = \{u \in X, (a(., 0)z_x(., .))_x \in X, z(0, t) = z(1, t) = 0\}$ . We now define mappings  $k: J_0 \times J_0 \times C \rightarrow X$  and  $f: J_0 \times C \times X \rightarrow X$  as follows

$$k(t, s, \phi)(x) = H(t, s, \phi(-r)x) \quad \dots(6.8)$$

$$f(t, \phi, y)(x) = G(t, \phi(-r)(x), y(x)). \quad \dots(6.9)$$

The problem (6.1) – (6.3) can be formulated abstractly as

$$\left. \begin{aligned} u'(t) + A(t)u(t) &= f(t, u_t, \int_0^t k(t, s, u_s) ds), t \in J_0 \\ u(t) &= \phi(t), -r \leq t \leq 0. \end{aligned} \right\} \quad \dots(6.10)$$



In view of definitions (6.8) and (6.9), it is easy to observe from  $(C_2)$  and  $(C_3)$  that the Hypotheses  $(H_1)$  and  $H_2$  hold. Now, a application of Theorem 7 yields a unique strict solution  $z(x, t) = u(\phi)(t)x$ ,  $x \in [0, 1]$ ,  $t \in J$  of (6.1) — (6.3).

For the following discussion, we suppose that the solution  $u(t)$  of (6.10) exists on  $[-r, \infty)$ .

Suppose that the functions  $H: R^+ \times R^+ \times R \rightarrow R$  and  $G: R^+ \times R \times R \rightarrow R$  in (6.1) satisfy the following conditions :

$(C_5)$  For  $t, s \in R^+$ ,  $v, v_1, v_2 \in R$

$$|H(t, s, v)| \leq L_1 e^{B(t-s)} |v| \quad \dots(6.11)$$

$$|G(t, v_1, v_2)| \leq L_2 e^{-Bt} [|v_1| + |v_2|] \quad \dots(6.12)$$

where  $L_1$  and  $L_2$  are nonnegative constants. Define mappings  $k: R^+ \times R^+ \times C \rightarrow X$  and  $f: R^+ \times C \times X \rightarrow X$  as in (6.8) and (6.9) respectively. From (6.8), (6.9), (6.11) and (6.12), it is easy to observe that the hypothesis  $(H_0)$  hold.

If the fundamental solution  $U(t, s)$ ,  $t, s \in R^+$ , of eqn. (2.5) satisfies condition (2.16) then by an application of Theorem 9, the solutions  $z(x, t)$  of (6.1)–(6.3) tends to zero as  $t \rightarrow \infty$ .

Theorems 8 and 10 can be applied equally well to study the boundedness and the growth of the solutions of (6.1)–(6.3) by using suitable conditions on the functions  $H$  and  $G$  involved in (6.1) and on the fundamental solution  $U$  of eqn. (2.5). We omit the details.

## REFERENCES

1. A. Belleni-Morante, *Boll. Un. Math. Ital.* **15** (1978), 470–82.
2. B. Burch, and J. Goldstein, *Houston J. Math.* **4** (1978), 311–28.
3. A. Friedman, *Partial differential Equations*. Holt Rinehart and Winston, Inc., New York, 1969.
4. M.L. Heard, *Siam. J. Math. Anal.* **13** (1982), 81–104.
5. S. Heikkila, *Rend. dell'Accad. Naz. dei XL*, **24-25**, (4) (1974), 3–15.
6. S. Heikkila, *Rend. dell'Accad. Naz. dei XL* (5) **1-2** (1975-1976), 1–12.
7. A. G. Kartsatos, and M. E. Parrott, *J. Diff. Eqns.* **47** (1983) 358–377.
8. A. G. Kartsatos, and M. E. Parrott, *Trans. Am. Math. Soc.* **286** (1984), 73–89.
9. G. E. Ladas and V. Lakshmikantham, *Differential Equations in Abstract Spaces*. Academic Press, New York, 1972.
10. V. Lakshmikantham, and S. Leela, *Differential and Integral Inequalities, Theory and Applications*, Vols. I and II. Academic Press, New York, 1969.
11. S. Lang, *Analysis II*. Addison, Wesley, Reading, Mass., 1969.
12. J.A. Nohel, in "Integral and Functional Differential Equations" (ed. : T. Herdman et al.), Lecture Notes in Pure and Appl. Math. Vol. 67, Dekker, New York, 1981, pp. 3–82.
13. B. G. Pachpatte, *J. Math. Anal. Appl.* **44** (1973), 758–62.

14. B.G. Pachpatte, *Bull. Austral. Math. Soc.* **12** (1975), 337-50.
15. B. G. Pachpatte, *J. Math. Anal. Appl.* **53** (1976), 604-617.
16. B.G. Pachpatte, *Proc. Indian Acad. Sci.* **87A** (1978), 189-200.
17. B.G. Pachpatte, *J. Diff. Eqns.* **16** (1974), 14-25.
18. C.C. Travis, and G.F. Webb, *Trans. Am. Math. Soc.* **200** (1974), 395-418.
19. C.C. Travis, and G.F. Webb, *Trans. Am. Math. Soc.* **240** (1978), 129-43.
20. W. Walter, *Differential and Integral Inequalities*, Springer-Verlag, Berlin, 1970.



## ON EXTENSION OF MAPS IN TOPOLOGICAL SPACES

P. THANGAVELU

Department of Mathematics, Aditanar College, Tiruchendur 628216, Tamilnadu

(Received 22 June 1987; after revision 4 December 1987)

The purpose of this paper is to investigate the piecewise definition of certain maps namely irresolute maps, semihomeomorphisms, etc.

### 1. INTRODUCTION

Levine<sup>5</sup> introduced the notion of semiopen sets in topological spaces, to study the properties of functions weaker than continuous functions. The purpose of this paper is to investigate the piecewise definition of certain maps. In this direction, we introduce in section 2 the notion of strongly *nb*d-finite family of sets and study its properties and applications. In this paper,  $X$  and  $Y$  always denote topological spaces.

### 2. STRONGLY *nb*d-FINITE

**Definition 2.1**—A family  $\{A_m; m \in M\}$  of subsets of  $X$  is said to be strongly *nb*d-finite if for each  $x$  in  $X$ , there is an open set  $V$  containing  $x$ , satisfying one of the following conditions :

- (a)  $V \cap A_m = \phi$  for every  $m$  in  $M$ .
- (b) There is a non-empty finite subset  $N$  of  $M$  such that
  - i)  $V \cap A_m \neq \phi$  for every  $m$  in  $N$ ,
  - ii)  $V \cap A_m \subset A_k$  for every  $m, k$  with  $m$  in  $N$  and  $k$  in  $N$ , and
  - iii)  $V \cap A_m = \phi$  for every  $m \notin N$ .

Every strongly *nb*d-finite family is *nb*d-finite<sup>4</sup>. However, a *nb*d-finite family need not be strongly *nb*d-finite, as shown by the following example.

**Example 2.2**—Let  $X = \{a, b, c\}$  and

$$T = \{\phi, \{a\}, \{b, c\}, X\}. \text{ Then } \{\{b\}, \{c\}\}$$

is *nb*d-finite but not strongly *nb*d-finite.

Before giving the properties we consider the following.

It is easy to prove the following results that are improved results of Theorem 1.8 of Crossely and Hildebrand<sup>2</sup>.

*Lemma 2.3*—If  $A$  and  $B$  are subsets of  $X$  such that  $A$  is open, then  $A \cap B = \phi$  implies  $A \cap \text{cl}(B) = \phi$  where  $\text{cl}(B)$  denotes the closure of  $B$  in  $X$ .

*Corollary 2.4*—Under the hypothesis of Lemma 2.3,  $A \cap B = \phi$  implies  $A \cap \text{scl}(B) = \phi$  where  $\text{scl}(B)$  is the semiclosure<sup>2</sup> of  $B$  in  $X$ .

*Lemma 2.5*—If  $A$  and  $B$  are subsets of  $X$  such that  $A$  is an  $\alpha$ -set<sup>6</sup> (Alpha set), then  $A \cap B = \phi$  implies  $A \cap \text{scl}(B) = \phi$ .

### 3. PROPERTIES

*Theorem 3.1*—If  $\{A_m; m \in M\}$  is strongly  $nb$ d-finite, then  $\{\text{scl}(A_m); m \in M\}$  is also strongly  $nb$ d-finite.

PROOF: Let  $x$  be in  $X$ . Choose  $V$  as in Definition 2.1. If 2.1 (a) holds, by Corollary 2.4,  $V \cap \text{scl}(A_m) = \phi$  for every  $m$  in  $M$ . So, let us assume that 2.1 (b) holds. It is enough to prove that  $V \cap \text{scl}(A_m) \subset \text{scl}(A_k)$  where  $m \in N$  and  $k \in N$ .

Let  $y \in V \cap \text{scl}(A_m)$ ,  $m \in N$ . Let  $S$  be any semiopen set containing  $y$ . Then, by Theorem 1.9 of Crossely and Hildebrand<sup>3</sup>,  $V \cap S$  is semiopen. Hence, by Lemma 3 of Noiri<sup>9</sup>,  $V \cap S \cap A_m \neq \phi$ . If  $k \in N$ , then by 2.1 (b) (ii),  $V \cap S \cap A_k \neq \phi$  which implies  $S \cap A_k \neq \phi$  and hence  $y \in \text{scl}(A_k)$ . This completes the proof.

*Theorem 3.2*—Let  $\{A_m; m \in M\}$  be  $nb$ d-finite in  $X$ . Then  $\{\text{scl}(A_m); m \in M\}$  is also  $nb$ d-finite.

PROOF: Analogous to Theorem 9.2 of Dugundji<sup>4</sup>.

In Dugundji<sup>4</sup>, it has been proved that union of closed sets of a  $nb$ d-finite family is closed. The following is an analog of this result for semiclosed<sup>2</sup> sets.

*Theorem 3.3*—If  $\{A_m; m \in M\}$  is a strongly  $nb$ d-finite family of semiclosed sets in  $X$ , then  $B = \bigcup_{m \in M} A_m$  is semiclosed.

PROOF: Let  $x$  be in  $X - B$ . Choose  $V$  as in Definition 2.1. If 2.1 (a) holds, take  $S = V$ . If 2.1 (b) holds, take  $S = \bigcup_{m \in N} [V \cap (X - A_m)]$ . Since union of semiopen sets is semiopen,  $S$  is semiopen. Clearly,  $x \in S$ . It is easy, by computation, to prove that  $B \cap S = \phi$  so that  $x \in S \subset X - B$  which implies that  $X - B$  is semiopen and hence  $B$  is semiclosed.

*Remark 3.4*: Theorem 3.3 need not be true for a  $nb$ d-finite family.

*Remark 3.5*: If  $\{A_m; m \in M\}$  is strongly  $nb$ d-finite, then  $\bigcup_{m \in M} \{\text{scl}(A_m)\}$  is semiclosed.

The following simple result on covering will be utilised in sequel.

*Theorem 3.6*—Let  $\{A_m; m \in M\}$  be an  $\alpha$ -set covering of  $X$  and  $B$ , a subset of  $X$ .



Then  $B$  is semiopen (resp. semiclosed) in  $X$  if and only if  $B \cap A_m$  is semiopen (resp. semiclosed) in the subspace  $A_m$  for every  $m$ .

PROOF : *Necessary part*—Let  $B$  be semiopen in  $X$ . Then, by Proposition 1 of Njastad<sup>6</sup>,  $B \cap A_m$  is semiopen in  $X$ . By Theorem 1 of Noiri<sup>7</sup>,  $B \cap A_m$  is semiopen in  $A_m$ .

Now, let  $B$  be semiclosed in  $X$ . Then  $X - B$  is semiopen in  $X$ . Again, by Proposition 1 of Njastad<sup>6</sup>,  $(X - B) \cap A_m$  is semiopen in  $X$  and hence semiopen in  $A_m$ . As  $(X - B) \cap A_m = A_m - (B \cap A_m)$ ,  $B \cap A_m$  is semiclosed in  $A_m$ .

*Sufficient part*—Assume that  $B \cap A_m$  is semiopen in  $A_m$  for every  $m$ . Then  $B \cap A_m$  is semiopen in  $X$  for every  $m$ . Since  $B = B \cap X = B \cap (\bigcup_{m \in M} A_m) = \bigcup_{m \in M} (B \cap A_m)$ ,  $B$  is semiopen in  $X$ . Assume that  $B \cap A_m$  is semiclosed in  $A_m$  for each  $m$ . Then  $A_m - (B \cap A_m)$  is semiopen in  $A_m$  and hence semiopen in  $X$ , by Theorem 1 of Noiri<sup>7</sup>. It is easy to see that

$$X - B = \bigcup_{m \in M} (A_m - (B \cap A_m)) \text{ which implies that } B \text{ is semiclosed in } X.$$

This completes the proof.

The main property of a strongly *nbd*-finite family is the next theorem.

**Theorem 3.7**—Let  $\{A_m; m \in M\}$  be a covering of  $X$  such that all  $A_m$  are semiclosed and form a strongly *nbd*-finite family. Let  $B$  be a subset of  $X$ . If  $B \cap A_m$  is semiclosed (resp. semiopen) in  $A_m$  for every  $m$ , then  $B$  is semiclosed (resp. semiopen) in  $X$ .

PROOF : If  $B \cap A_m$  is semiclosed in  $A_m$  for every  $m$ , then by Lemma 2.19 of Sivaraj<sup>11</sup>,  $B \cap A_m$  is semiclosed in  $X$  and as  $\{B \cap A_m; m \in M\}$  is strongly *nbd*-finite,  $\bigcup_m (B \cap A_m)$  is semiclosed in  $X$  which implies  $B$  is semiclosed in  $X$ .

If  $B \cap A_m$  is semiopen in  $A_m$ , it can be proved, by considering complements, that  $B$  is semiopen in  $X$ . This completes the proof.

#### 4. APPLICATIONS

In analysis, continuous functions are frequently defined piecewise. Here we have an analog situation for irresolute<sup>3</sup> and semi continuous<sup>5</sup> maps.

**Theorem 4.1**—Let  $\{A_m; m \in M\}$  be a covering of  $\alpha$ -sets or a strongly *nbd*-finite covering of semiclosed sets of  $X$ . For each  $m$ , let  $f_m$  be a given irresolute (resp. semi continuous) map of  $A_m$  into  $Y$ . Assume that  $f_m$  and  $f_k$  coincide on  $A_m \cap A_k$  for every  $m$  in  $M$  and for every  $k$  in  $M$ . Then there is a unique irresolute (resp. semi continuous) map  $f$  of  $X$  into  $Y$  which extends each  $f_m$ .

PROOF : Existence and uniqueness of a map  $f$  follow from Theorem 6.7 (p.13) of Dugundji<sup>4</sup>.

To prove that  $f$  is irresolute (resp. semi continuous), let  $B$  be a semiopen (resp. open) subset of  $Y$ . Since  $f_m$  is irresolute (resp. semi continuous),  $f_m^{-1}(B)$  is semiopen in  $A_m$  for every  $m$ . Since  $f^{-1}(B) \cap A_m = f_m^{-1}(B)$ , by Theorems 3.6 and 3.7,  $f^{-1}(B)$  is semiopen in  $X$ . This completes the proof.

**Theorem 4.2**—Let  $\{B_m; m \in M\}$  be an  $\alpha$ -set or a strongly  $nbd$ -finite semiclosed covering of  $Y$ . Let  $f$  be a map of  $X$  into  $Y$ . If the restriction  $f_m$  of  $f$  to  $f^{-1}(B_m)$  is a semiopen<sup>1</sup> (resp. semiclosed<sup>6</sup>) map of  $f^{-1}(B_m)$  into  $B_m$  for each  $m$  in  $M$ , then  $f$  is semiopen (resp. semiclosed).

**PROOF**: Let  $A$  be an open (resp. closed) subset of  $X$ . Then  $A \cap f^{-1}(B_m)$  is open (resp. closed) in  $f^{-1}(B_m)$ . Since  $f_m(A \cap f^{-1}(B_m)) = f(A) \cap B_m$  and since  $f_m$  is semiopen (resp. semiclosed),  $f(A) \cap B_m$  is semiopen (resp. semiclosed) in  $B_m$ . Then the proof follows from Theorems 3.6 and 3.7.

**Theorem 4.3**—Let  $\{B_m; m \in M\}$  be a covering of  $\alpha$ -sets of  $Y$ . Let  $f$  be a map of  $X$  into  $Y$  such that  $\{f^{-1}(B_m); m \in M\}$  is a covering of  $\alpha$ -set of  $X$ . If the restriction  $f_m$  of  $f$  to  $f^{-1}(B_m)$  is a presemiopen<sup>3</sup> (resp. presemiclosed<sup>10</sup>) map of  $f^{-1}(B_m)$  into  $B_m$  for each  $m$  in  $M$ , then  $f$  is presemiopen (resp. presemiclosed).

**PROOF**: Analogous to Theorem 4.2.

**Theorem 4.4**—Let  $\{B_m; m \in M\}$  be an  $\alpha$ -set covering of  $Y$  and let  $f$  be an injective map of  $X$  onto  $Y$  such that  $\{f^{-1}(B_m); m \in M\}$  is an  $\alpha$ -set covering of  $X$ . If the restriction  $f_m$  of  $f$  to  $f^{-1}(B_m)$  is a semihomeomorphism<sup>3</sup> of  $f^{-1}(B_m)$  to  $B_m$  for each  $m$  in  $M$ , then  $f$  is a semihomeomorphism.

**PROOF**: Follows from Theorems 4.1 and 4.3.

#### ACKNOWLEDGEMENT

In conclusion, the author expresses his sincere thanks and deep gratitude to Professors Dr P. Alphonse Rajendran and Dr D. Sivaraj for their constant encouragement and guidance throughout the preparation of this paper and to the referee for his valuable suggestions.

#### REFERENCES

1. N. Biswas, *Bull. Calcutta Math. Soc.* **61** (1969), 127-35.
2. S. G. Crossely, and S. K. Hildebrand, *Texas J. Sci.* **22** (1971), 99-112.
3. S. G. Crossely, and S. K. Hildebrand, *Fund. Math.* **74** (1972), 233-54.
4. J. Dugundji, *Topology*. Prentice Hall of India Private Ltd. New Delhi 1975.
5. N. Levine, *Am. Math. Monthly* **70** (1963), 36-41.
6. O. Njastad, *Pacific J. Math.* **15** (1965), 961-70.
7. T. Noiri, *Atti-Accad. Naz. Lincei Rend Cl. Sci. Fis. Mat. Natur* (8), **54** (1973), 210-14.
8. T. Noiri, *Atti. Accad. Naz. Lincei Rend Cl. Sci. Fis. Mat. Natur* (8), **54** (1973), 412-15.
9. T. Noiri, *Atti. Acad. Naz. Lincei Rend Cl. Sci. Fis. Mat. Natur* (5), **55** (1973), 400-403.
10. D. Sivaraj, *Acta Math. Hung.* **48** (1-2) (1986), 139-45.
11. D. Sivaraj, Ph.D. thesis, Punjabi University, Patiala, India.



# ON MINIMAL PAIRWISE HAUSDORFF BITOPOLOGICAL SPACES

C. G. KARIOFILLIS

*Faculty of Science, Department of Mathematics, Aristotle University of  
Thessaloniki, 54006 Thessaloniki (Greece)*

(Received 20 July 1987; after revision 30 March 1988)

The purpose of this paper is to investigate minimal pairwise Hausdorff bitopological spaces. The pairwise semiregularization of a bitopological space is introduced and a brief outline of its properties is given. A new concept of pairwise almost compactness is defined and filter characterizations of (pairwise Hausdorff) pairwise almost compact spaces are obtained. The above concepts are used to prove bitopological analogues of two well-known Theorems given by M. Katetov and B. Banaschewski for minimal Hausdorff topological spaces.

## INTRODUCTION

The concept of minimal pairwise Hausdorff bitopological spaces was initiated by Raghavan and Reilly<sup>8</sup>. The purpose of this paper is to continue the study of the above concept.

In section 1 we introduce the pairwise semiregularization of a bitopological space and examine its properties. We investigate also a certain type of bitopological adherence and convergence of filters. In section 2 we introduce a new concept of pairwise almost compactness and discuss its relationship to other well-known forms of bitopological compactness. In section 3 we give filter characterizations of (pairwise Hausdorff) pairwise almost compact spaces. In section 4 we improve a characterization of minimal pairwise Hausdorff spaces given by Raghavan and Reilly, and generalize two well-known Theorems of Katetov<sup>5</sup> and Banaschewski<sup>1</sup>. Finally, we prove that the concept of minimal pairwise Hausdorff spaces is not product invariant.

Throughout this paper if  $(X, \tau_1, \tau_2)$  is a bitopological space the  $\tau_i$ -interior of a set  $A \subset X$  is denoted by  $\langle A \rangle_i$  or  $\langle A \rangle_{\tau_i}$  and the  $\tau_i$ -closure of  $A$  by  $[A]_i$  or  $[A]_{\tau_i}$ , where  $i = 1, 2$ . The set of all  $\tau_i$ -neighbourhoods of a point  $x \in X$  is denoted by  $\mathcal{N}_i(x)$  and the set of all  $\tau_i$ -open neighbourhoods of  $x$  by  $\tau_i(x)$ ,  $i = 1, 2$ . Whenever we deal with a statement involving the topologies  $\tau_i$  and  $\tau_j$  it will be understood that  $i, j = 1, 2$  and  $i \neq j$ . Generally terms and notations not explained in this paper are those of Kelly<sup>6</sup>, Cooke and Reilly<sup>3</sup> and Raghavan and Reilly<sup>8</sup>.

## 1. PRELIMINARY DEFINITIONS AND THEOREMS

### A. Pairwise Semiregularization

Let  $(X, \tau_1, \tau_2)$  be a bitopological space. According to Singal and Singal<sup>10</sup> a subset  $A$  of  $X$  is said to be  $(i, j)$ -regularly open if  $A = \langle [A]_j \rangle_i$ .

*Definition 1.1*— $(X, \tau_1, \tau_2)$  is said to be  $(i, j)$ -semiregular if for each  $x \in X$  the collection of all  $(i, j)$ -regularly open neighbourhoods of  $x$  is a  $\tau_i$ -open neighbourhood base at  $x$ . If  $(X, \tau_1, \tau_2)$  is  $(1, 2)$ - and  $(2, 1)$ -semiregular it is called pairwise semiregular (henceforth abbreviated as  $p$ -semiregular).

Since the intersection of two  $(i, j)$ -regularly open sets is an  $(i, j)$ -regularly open set, we obtain the following result.

*Proposition 1.2*—The collection of all  $(i, j)$ -regularly open sets forms a base for a topology  $\tau_i^s$  on  $X$ , coarser than  $\tau_i$ .

*Definition 1.3*—The bitopological space  $(X, \tau_1^s, \tau_2^s)$  is called the pairwise semi-regularization (henceforth abbreviated as  $p$ -semiregularization) of  $(X, \tau_1, \tau_2)$ .

*Theorem 1.4*—A bitopological space  $(X, \tau_1, \tau_2)$  is  $(i, j)$ -semiregular (resp.  $p$ -semiregular) iff  $\tau_i^s = \tau_i$  (resp.  $\tau_1^s = \tau_1$  and  $\tau_2^s = \tau_2$ ).

PROOF : Follows from Definition 1.1 and Proposition 1.2.

Using the fact that the set  $\langle [A]_j \rangle_i$  is  $(i, j)$ -regularly open for each  $A \subset X$ , we can easily prove the following lemma.

*Lemma 1.5*—If  $(X, \tau_1^s, \tau_2^s)$  is the  $p$ -semiregularization of  $(X, \tau_1, \tau_2)$ , then  $[V]_j = [V]_{\tau_j^s}$  and  $\langle [V]_i \rangle_j = \langle [V]_{\tau_i^s} \rangle_{\tau_j^s}$  for each  $V \in \tau_i$ .

*Proposition 1.6*—A subset  $A$  of  $X$  is  $(i, j)$ -regularly open in  $(X, \tau_1, \tau_2)$  iff it is  $(i, j)$ -regularly open in  $(X, \tau_1^s, \tau_2^s)$ .

PROOF : Follows from Lemma 1.5.

*Theorem 1.7*—The  $p$ -regularization  $(X, \tau_1^s, \tau_2^s)$  of  $(X, \tau_1, \tau_2)$  is a  $p$ -semiregular bitopological space.

PROOF : Follows from Propositions 1.2, 1.6 and Theorem 1.4.

Our last result is easily proved.

*Theorem 1.8*— $(X, \tau_1, \tau_2)$  is  $p$ -Hausdorff<sup>3</sup> iff  $(X, \tau_1^s, \tau_2^s)$  is  $p$ -Hausdorff.

## B. $\theta_{ij}$ -adherence and convergence of filters

Let  $(X, \tau_1, \tau_2)$  be a bitopological space.

*Definition 1.9*—A point  $x \in X$  is said to be  $\theta_{ij}$ -adherent point of  $A \subset X$  if  $[V]_j \cap A \neq \emptyset$  for each  $V \in \mathcal{F}_i(x)$ . The set of all  $\theta_{ij}$ -adherent points of  $A$  is denoted by  $[A]_{ij}$ .



**Definition 1.10**—A point  $x \in X$  is said to be  $\theta_{ij}$ -limit point (resp.  $\theta_{ij}$ -adherent point) of a filter  $\mathcal{F}$  on  $X$  if  $\mathcal{F} \supset \{[V]_j : V \in \mathcal{N}_i(x)\}$  (resp. if  $x \in \bigcap \{[F]_{ij} : F \in \mathcal{F}\}$ ). If  $\mathcal{B}$  is a filterbase on  $X$ , then a point  $x \in X$  is called  $\theta_{ij}$ -limit point (resp.  $\theta_{ij}$ -adherent point) of  $\mathcal{B}$  if  $x$  is  $\theta_{ij}$ -limit point (resp.  $\theta_{ij}$ -adherent point) of the filter  $\mathcal{F}$  generated by  $\mathcal{B}$ . The set of all  $\theta_{ij}$ -limit points of a filter  $\mathcal{F}$  (resp. filterbase  $\mathcal{B}$ ) is denoted by  $\theta_{ij}\text{-lim } \mathcal{F}$  (resp.  $\theta_{ij}\text{-lim } \mathcal{B}$ ) and the set of all  $\theta_{ij}$ -adherent points of a filter  $\mathcal{F}$  (resp. filterbase  $\mathcal{B}$ ) by  $\theta_{ij}\text{-adh } \mathcal{F}$  (resp.  $\theta_{ij}\text{-adh } \mathcal{B}$ ).

It is obvious that a point  $x \in X$  is  $\theta_{ij}$ -limit point (resp.  $\theta_{ij}$ -adherent point) of a filter base  $\mathcal{B}$  on  $X$  iff for each  $V \in \mathcal{N}_i(x)$  there exists a  $B \in \mathcal{B}$  such that  $B \subset [V]_j$  (resp. iff  $x \in \bigcap \{[B]_{ij} : B \in \mathcal{B}\}$ ).

We recall that a filter  $\mathcal{F}$  on  $X$  is called  $\tau_i$ -open if it has a base  $\mathcal{B}$  consisting exclusively by  $\tau_i$ -open sets.

The proofs of the following results are straightforward and therefore they are omitted.

**Proposition 1.11**—(a) For each  $A \subset X$ ,  $[A]_i \subset [A]_{ij}$ .

(b) If  $A \subset B \subset X$ , then  $[A]_{ij} \subset [B]_{ij}$ .

(c) If  $A \in \tau_j$ , then  $[A]_i = [A]_{ij}$ .

**Proposition 1.12**—(a) If  $\mathcal{F}$  is a filter on  $X$ , then  $\theta_{ij}\text{-lim } \mathcal{F} \subset \theta_{ij}\text{-adh } \mathcal{F}$ ,  $\tau_i\text{-lim } \mathcal{F} \subset \theta_{ij}\text{-lim } \mathcal{F}$  and  $\tau_i\text{-adh } \mathcal{F} \subset \theta_{ij}\text{-adh } \mathcal{F}$ .

(b) If  $\mathcal{F}, \mathcal{F}^*$  are two filters on  $X$  such that  $\mathcal{F} \subset \mathcal{F}^*$ , then  $\theta_{ij}\text{-lim } \mathcal{F} \subset \theta_{ij}\text{-lim } \mathcal{F}^*$  and  $\theta_{ij}\text{-adh } \mathcal{F}^* \subset \theta_{ij}\text{-adh } \mathcal{F}$ .

(c) If  $\mathcal{F}$  is a  $\tau_j$ -open filter on  $X$ , the  $\theta_{ij}\text{-adh } \mathcal{F} = \tau_i\text{-adh } \mathcal{F}$ .

Finally, we prove two useful lemmas.

**Lemma 1.13**—If  $(X, \tau_1, \tau_2)$  is  $(i, j)$ -semiregular, then  $\theta_{ij}\text{-lim } \mathcal{B} = \tau_i\text{-lim } \mathcal{B}$  for each  $\tau_i$ -open filterbase  $\mathcal{B}$  on  $X$ .

**PROOF** : By Proposition 1.12 (x),  $\tau_i\text{-lim } \mathcal{B} \subset \theta_{ij}\text{-lim } \mathcal{B}$ .

Let now  $x$  be a  $\theta_{ij}$ -limit point of  $\mathcal{B}$  and  $V$  a  $\tau_i$ -open neighbourhood of  $x$ . Since  $(X, \tau_1, \tau_2)$  is  $(i, j)$ -semiregular there exists an  $(i, j)$ -regularly open neighbourhood  $W$  of  $x$  such that  $x \in W \subset V$ . By the hypothesis  $x \in \theta_{ij}\text{-lim } \mathcal{B}$ , so there exists a  $B \in \mathcal{B}$  with  $B \subset [W]_j$ . Finally, since  $B \in \tau_i$  and  $W = \langle [W]_j \rangle_i$  it is clear that  $B \subset W \subset V$ . Thus  $x \in \tau_i\text{-lim } \mathcal{B}$  and the proof is complete.

**Lemma 1.14**—If  $(X, \tau_1, \tau_2)$  is a bitopological space, then for each filter  $\mathcal{F}$  on  $X$  there exists a  $\tau_j$ -open filter  $\mathcal{F}^*$  on  $X$ , coarser than  $\mathcal{F}$ , such that  $\tau_i\text{-adh } \mathcal{F}^* = \theta_{ij}\text{-adh } \mathcal{F}$ .

**PROOF** : Let  $\mathcal{F}$  be a filter on  $X$ . If  $\theta_{ij}\text{-adh } \mathcal{F} = X$ , then the  $\tau_j$ -open filter  $\mathcal{F}^* = \{X\}$  is coarser than  $\mathcal{F}$  and  $\tau_i\text{-adh } \mathcal{F}^* = X$ . If  $\theta_{ij}\text{-adh } \mathcal{F} \neq X$ , then for

each  $x \in X - (\theta_{ij}\text{-adh } \mathcal{F})$  there exist a  $V_x \in \tau_i(x)$  and an  $F_x \in \mathcal{F}$  such that  $F_x \cap [V_x]_j = \phi$ . If now  $\mathcal{V}$  is the collection of all these  $V_x$ 's it is easily proved that  $\mathcal{B} = \{X - [V]_j : V \in \mathcal{V}\}$  is a  $\tau_j$ -open filterbase which generates a filter  $\mathcal{F}^*$  on  $X$ , coarser than  $\mathcal{F}$ . Since  $\mathcal{V}$  is a  $\tau_i$ -open cover of  $X - (\theta_{ij}\text{-adh } \mathcal{F})$ , it is clear that

$$\tau_i\text{-adh } \mathcal{F}^* = \cap \{[X - [V]_j]_i : V \in \mathcal{V}\} = X - \cup \{<[V]_j>_i : V \in \mathcal{V}\} \\ \subset \theta_{ij}\text{-adh } \mathcal{F}.$$

Finally, by Proposition 1.12,  $\theta_{ij}\text{-adh } \mathcal{F} \subset \tau_i\text{-adh } \mathcal{F}^*$  and hence the proof is complete.

## 2. PAIRWISE ALMOST COMPACTNESS

**Definition 2.1**—A bitopological space  $(X, \tau_1, \tau_2)$  is called  $(i, j)$ -almost compact (henceforth abbreviated as  $(i, j) - a - c$ ) if given a point  $c \in X$ , a  $\tau_i$ -open cover  $\mathcal{G} = \{G_k : k \in K\}$  of  $X - \{c\}$  and a  $\tau_j$ -open neighbourhood  $V$  of  $c$ , there exists a finite subcollection  $\{G_{k_m} : m = 1, 2, \dots, n\}$  of  $\mathcal{G}$  with  $X = [V]_i \cup (\cup \{[G_{k_m}]_j : m = 1, 2, \dots, n\})$ . If  $(X, \tau_1, \tau_2)$  is  $(1, 2)$ - and  $(2, 1)$ - $a-c$ , then it is called pairwise almost compact (henceforth abbreviated as  $p - a - c$ ).

The following result is an immediate consequence of the above definition and Lemma 1.5.

**Theorem 2.2**—If  $(X, \tau_1, \tau_2)$  is  $p - a - c$ , then the  $p$ -semiregularization  $(X, \tau_1^s, \tau_2^s)$  of  $(X, \tau_1, \tau_2)$  is also  $p - a - c$ .

It is clear from the definitions and Example 2.3 below that  $p$ - $a$ -compactness is strictly weaker than semi-compactness and  $p$ -compactness (Cooke and Reilly<sup>3</sup>, Swart<sup>11</sup> and Fletcher *et al.*<sup>4</sup>)

**Example 2.3**—Let  $X = [0, 1]$ . The collections

$$\mathcal{A}_1 = \{X\} \cup \{(a, b) : 0 \leq a < b \leq 1\} \cup \{(a, 1] : 0 \leq a < 1\}$$

$$\cup \left\{ [0, b) - \left\{ \frac{1}{n} : n \in \mathbb{N} \right\} : 0 < b \leq 1 \right\}$$

$$\mathcal{B}_2 = \{X\} \cup \{(a, b) : 0 \leq a < b \leq 1\} \cup \{[0, b) : 0 < b \leq 1\}$$

$$\cup \left\{ (a, 1] - \left\{ 1 - \frac{1}{n} : n \in \mathbb{N} \right\} : 0 \leq a < 1 \right\}$$

are bases for the topologies  $\tau_1$  and  $\tau_2$  respectively.

The collection

$$\mathcal{A} = \left\{ [0, 1) - \left\{ \frac{1}{n} : n \in \mathbb{N} \right\}, \left( \frac{1}{2}, 1 \right] \right\} \cup \left\{ \left( \frac{1}{n+1}, \frac{1}{n-1} \right) : n \in \mathbb{N} - \{1\} \right\}$$



is clearly a  $\tau_1 \tau_2$ -open and also a pairwise open cover of  $X$ . Since any finite sub-collection of  $\mathcal{A}$  does not cover  $X$ ,  $(X, \tau_1, \tau_2)$  is neither semi-compact nor  $p$ -compact. However, since the topological space  $(X, \tau)$ , where  $\tau$  is the usual topology on  $X$ , is compact and  $[B]_j = [B]$ , for each  $B \in \mathcal{B}_i$ , it is easily proved that  $(X, \tau_1, \tau_2)$  is  $p-a-c$ .

By the following examples we show that  $B$ -compactness (Cooke and Reilly<sup>3</sup> and Birsan<sup>2</sup>) does not imply and is not implied by  $p$ - $a$ -compactness.

*Example 2.4*—Let  $X = [0, 1]$ ,  $\tau_1 = \{\phi, X, \{0\}\} \cup \{[0, \alpha) : 0 < \alpha \leq 1\}$  and  $\tau_2 = \{\phi, X, \{1\}\} \cup \{(a, 1] : 0 \leq a < 1\}$ . The bitopological space  $(X, \tau_1, \tau_2)$  is clearly  $B$ -compact. However, since there exist a  $\tau_1$ -open cover  $\mathcal{A} = \left\{ \left[0, 1 - \frac{1}{n}\right) : n \in \mathbb{N} - \{1\} \right\}$  of  $X - \{1\}$  and a  $\tau_2$ -open neighbourhood  $V = \{1\}$  of the point  $c = 1$  such that for each finite subset  $\{m_1, m_2, \dots, m_n\}$  of  $\mathbb{N} - \{1\}$ ,  $[V]_1 \cup \left( \bigcup \left\{ \left[0, 1 - \frac{1}{m_k}\right) : k = 1, 2, \dots, n \right\} \right) = \{1\} \cup \left[0, 1 - \frac{1}{m_0}\right) \neq X$  ( $m_0 = \max \{m_1, m_2, \dots, m_n\}$ ),  $(X, \tau_1, \tau_2)$  is not  $p-a-c$ .

*Example 2.5*—Let  $(X, \tau_1, \tau_2)$  be the  $p-a-c$  space of Example 2.3. Since the topological spaces  $(X, \tau_1)$  and  $(X, \tau_2)$  are not compact, it is clear that  $(X, \tau_1, \tau_2)$  is not  $B$ -compact.

Finally, by the next two examples, we show that  $p$ - $a$ -compactness does not imply and is not implied by Mukherjee's<sup>7</sup>  $p$ - $a$ -compactness (henceforth denoted by  $M$ - $a$ -compactness).

*Example 2.6*—The topological space  $(X, \tau_1, \tau_2)$ , where  $X = \mathbb{R}$ ,  $\tau_1$  the discrete topology and  $\tau_2$  the topology of finite complements on  $\mathbb{R}$ , is clearly  $p-a-c$  but it is not  $M-a-c$ .

*Example 2.7*—The bitopological space  $(X, \tau_1, \tau_2)$  of Example 2.4 is not  $p-a-c$ . However, since  $(X, \tau_1)$  and  $(X, \tau_2)$  are compact topological spaces,  $(X, \tau_1, \tau_2)$  is  $M-a-c$ .

### 3. FILTER CHARACTERIZATIONS OF $p$ - $a$ -COMPACTNESS

*Theorem 3.1*—Let  $(X, \tau_1, \tau_2)$  be a bitopological space. The following are equivalent.

- (i)  $(X, \tau_1, \tau_2)$  is  $(i, j)$ - $a-c$ .
- (ii) For each point  $c \in X$  and for each  $\tau_j$ -open filterbase  $\mathcal{B}$  on  $X$  with  $\tau_i\text{-adh } \mathcal{B} \subset \{c\}$ ,  $c \in \theta_{ji}\text{-lim } \mathcal{B}$ .
- (iii) For each point  $c \in X$  and for each filter  $\mathcal{F}$  on  $X$  with  $\theta_{ij}\text{-adh } \mathcal{F} \subset \{c\}$ ,  $c \in \theta_{ji}\text{-lim } \mathcal{F}$ .

PROOF : (i)  $\Rightarrow$  (ii) Let  $c$  be a point of  $X$ ,  $\mathcal{B}$  a  $\tau_j$ -open filterbase on  $X$  with  $\tau_i$ -adh  $\mathcal{B} \subset \{c\}$  and  $V$  a  $\tau_j$ -open neighbourhood of  $c$ . Since  $\cap \{[B]_i : B \in \mathcal{B}\} \subset \{c\}$ , the collection  $\{X - [B]_i : B \in \mathcal{B}\}$  is a  $\tau_i$ -open cover of  $X - \{c\}$ . Therefore there exists a finite subcollection  $\{B_k : k = 1, 2, \dots, n\}$  of  $\mathcal{B}$  such that

$$\begin{aligned} X &= [V]_i \cup (U \{[X - [B_k]_i]_j : k = 1, 2, \dots, n\}) \\ &= [V]_i \cup (X - \cap \{<[B_k]_i>_j : k = 1, 2, \dots, n\}). \end{aligned}$$

Finally, if we choose a  $B \in \mathcal{B}$  with  $B \subset B_1 \cap B_2 \cap \dots \cap B_n$  it is clear that  $B \subset [V]_i$  and hence  $c \in \theta_{ji}$ -lim  $\mathcal{B}$ .

(ii)  $\Rightarrow$  (i) Suppose  $(X, \tau_1, \tau_2)$  is not  $(i, j) - a - c$ . Then there exist a point  $c \in X$ , a  $\tau_i$ -open cover  $\{G_l : l \in L\}$  of  $X - \{c\}$  and a  $\tau_j$ -open neighbourhood  $V$  of  $c$ , such that for each finite subset  $K$  of  $L$ ,  $X \neq [V]_i \cup (U \{[G_k]_j : k \in K\})$ .

Since now  $(X - [V]_i) \cap (\cap \{X - [G_k]_j : k \in K\}) \neq \emptyset$ , it is easily proved that  $\mathcal{B} = \{ \cap_{k \in K} (X - [G_k]_j) : K \subset L, K \text{ finite} \}$  is a  $\tau_j$ -open filterbase on  $X$  with  $\tau_i$ -adh  $\mathcal{B} \subset \{c\}$  such that  $B \not\subset [V]_i$  for each  $B \in \mathcal{B}$ . Therefore  $c \notin \theta_{ji}$ -lim  $\mathcal{B}$  and the proof is complete.

(ii)  $\Rightarrow$  (iii) Follows from Lemma 1.14 and Proposition 1.12 (b).

(iii)  $\Rightarrow$  (ii) Follows from Proposition 1.12 (c).

**Theorem 3.2**—If  $(X, \tau_1, \tau_2)$  is  $p$ -Hausdorff, then the following are equivalent.

- (i)  $(X, \tau_1, \tau_2)$  is  $(i, j) - a - c$ .
- (ii) For each  $\tau_j$ -open filterbase  $\mathcal{B}$  on  $X$  with  $\tau_i$ -adh  $\mathcal{B} = \{c\}$ ,  $c \in \theta_{ji}$ -lim  $\mathcal{B}$ .
- (iii) For each filter  $\mathcal{F}$  on  $X$  with  $\theta_{ij}$ -adh  $\mathcal{F} = \{c\}$ ,  $c \in \theta_{ji}$ -lim  $\mathcal{F}$ .

PROOF : (i)  $\Rightarrow$  (ii) Follows from Theorem 3.1.

(ii)  $\Rightarrow$  (i) We need only prove that for each  $\tau_j$ -open filterbase  $\mathcal{B}$  on  $X$  with  $\tau_i$ -adh  $\mathcal{B} = \emptyset$ ,  $\theta_{ji}$ -lim  $\mathcal{B} = X$ . Let  $\mathcal{G}$  be a  $\tau_j$ -open filterbase on  $X$  with  $\tau_i$ -adh  $\mathcal{B} = \emptyset$  and  $c$  a point of  $X$ . It is easily proved that  $\mathcal{G}^* = \{B \cup G : B \in \mathcal{B} \text{ and } G \in \tau_j(c)\}$  is a  $\tau_j$ -open filterbase on  $X$  with  $\tau_i$ -adh  $\mathcal{B}^* = \{c\}$ . So, by the hypothesis,  $c \in \theta_{ji}$ -lim  $\mathcal{B}^*$ . Since now the filter  $\mathcal{F}^*$  generated by  $\mathcal{B}^*$  is coarser than the filter  $\mathcal{F}$  generated by  $\mathcal{B}$ , it is clear, by Proposition 1.12 (b), that  $c \in \theta_{ji}$ -lim  $\mathcal{B}$  and the proof is complete.

(ii)  $\Leftrightarrow$  (iii) Follows from Lemma 1.14 and Proposition 1.12.

By the following example one can see that the condition " $p$ -Hausdorff" can not be omitted in Theorem 3.2.



*Example 3.3*—Let  $(\mathbb{R}^2, \tau_1, \tau_2)$  be the bitopological product [Swart<sup>11</sup>], of the spaces  $(\mathbb{R}, \tau'_1, \tau'_2)$  and  $(\mathbb{R}, \tau''_1, \tau''_2)$ , where  $\tau'_1$  is the discrete topology,  $\tau'_2 = \tau''_1$  the usual topology and  $\tau''_2$  the topology of finite complements on  $\mathbb{R}$ . Clearly  $(\mathbb{R}^2, \tau_1, \tau_2)$  is not  $p$ -Hausdorff. Since there exist a  $\tau_1$ -open cover  $\mathcal{A} = \{\{x\} \times \mathbb{R} : x \in \mathbb{R}\}$  of  $\mathbb{R}^2 - \{(0, 0)\}$  and a  $\tau_2$ -open neighbourhood  $V = (-1, 1) \times \mathbb{R}$  of the point  $c = (0, 0)$  such that for each finite subset  $\{x_1, x_2, \dots, x_n\}$  of  $\mathbb{R}$

$$\begin{aligned} [V]_{\tau_1} \cup (\cup \{[x_k]_{\tau_2} : k = 1, 2, \dots, n\}) \\ = ((-1, 1) \cup \{x_1, x_2, \dots, x_n\}) \times \mathbb{R} \neq \mathbb{R}^2 \end{aligned}$$

$(\mathbb{R}^2, \tau_1, \tau_2)$  is not  $(1, 2) - a - c$ .

However, we can easily prove that property (ii) (and also the equivalent property (iii)) of Theorem 3.2 does hold in  $(\mathbb{R}^2, \tau_1, \tau_2)$ . In fact if  $\mathcal{B}$  is a  $\tau_2$ -open filterbase on  $\mathbb{R}^2$  and  $(x_0, y_0) \in \tau_1\text{-adh } \mathcal{B}$  it is easy to see that for each  $y \in \mathbb{R}$ ,  $(x_0, y)$  is also a  $\tau_1$ -adherent point of  $\mathcal{B}$ . That means that each  $\tau_2$ -open filterbase on  $\mathbb{R}^2$  with non empty  $\tau_1$ -adherence has an infinite number of  $\tau_1$ -adherent points and hence  $(\mathbb{R}^2, \tau_1, \tau_2)$  has property (ii) (and also property (iii)).

#### 4. MINIMAL $p$ -HAUSDORFF SPACES

The concept of minimal  $p$ -Hausdorff bitopological spaces was initiated by Raghavan and Reilly<sup>8</sup> as follows.

*Definition 4.1*—A bitopological space  $(X, \tau_1, \tau_2)$  is called minimal  $p$ -Hausdorff if it is  $p$ -Hausdorff and if  $(X, \tau_3, \tau_4)$  is  $p$ -Hausdorff with  $\tau_3 \subset \tau_1$  and  $\tau_4 \subset \tau_2$ , then  $\tau_1 = \tau_3$  and  $\tau_2 = \tau_4$ .

Raghavan and Reilly<sup>8</sup> gave the following characterization of minimal  $p$ -Hausdorff spaces.

*Theorem 4.2*<sup>8</sup>—If  $(X, \tau_1, \tau_2)$  is  $p$ -Hausdorff, then the following are equivalent.

- (a)  $(X, \tau_1, \tau_2)$  is minimal  $p$ -Hausdorff.
- (b) For each  $\tau_1$ -open filterbase  $\mathcal{B}_1$  and for each  $\tau_2$ -open filterbase  $\mathcal{B}_2$  on  $X$  with  $\tau_2\text{-adh } \mathcal{B}_1 = \tau_1\text{-adh } \mathcal{B}_2 = \{p\}$ ,  $\mathcal{B}_1$  is  $\tau_1$ -convergent to  $p$  and  $\mathcal{B}_2$  is  $\tau_2$ -convergent to  $p$ .

By the following result we show that there is no need of the sharing of the point  $p$  in the above Theorem.

*Theorem 4.3*—If  $(X, \tau_1, \tau_2)$  is  $p$ -Hausdorff, then the following are equivalent.

- (i)  $(X, \tau_1, \tau_2)$  is minimal  $p$ -Hausdorff
- (ii) Each  $\tau_i$ -open filterbase  $\mathcal{B}_i$  on  $X$  with a unique  $\tau_j$ -adherent point  $x_i$  is  $\tau_i$ -convergent to  $x_i$  ( $i, j = 1, 2, i \neq j$ ).

PROOF: We need only to prove that (b) of Theorem 4.2 implies (ii) of Theorem 4.3. Let  $\mathcal{B}_i$  be a  $\tau_i$ -open filterbase on  $X$  with  $\tau_j\text{-adh } \mathcal{B}_i = \{x_i\}$ . Since  $(X, \tau_1, \tau_2)$  is  $p$ -Hausdorff,  $\tau_i\text{-adh } \tau_j(x_i) = \bigcap \{V_i : V \in \tau_j(x_i)\} = \{x_i\}$  (Reilly<sup>9</sup>). Therefore, by (b) of Theorem 4.2,  $x_i \in \tau_i\text{-lim } \mathcal{B}_i$ .

Our next result is a generalization of the following well-known Theorem 1.4 of Katetov<sup>5</sup>: A Hausdorff topological space is minimal Hausdorff iff it is almost compact and semiregular.

**Theorem 4.4**—A  $p$ -Hausdorff space  $(X, \tau_1, \tau_2)$  is minimal  $p$ -Hausdorff iff it is  $p - a - c$  and  $p$ -semiregular.

PROOF: Let  $(X, \tau_1, \tau_2)$  be a minimal  $p$ -Hausdorff bitopological space and  $\mathcal{B}_i$  a  $\tau_i$ -open filterbase on  $X$  with  $\tau_j\text{-adh } \mathcal{B}_i = \{x_i\}$  ( $i, j = 1, 2, i \neq j$ ). By Theorem 4.3 and Proposition 1.12,  $\mathcal{B}_i$  is  $\theta_{ij}$ -convergent to  $x_i$ . Thus, by Theorem 3.2,  $(X, \tau_1, \tau_2)$  is  $p - a - c$ .

By Theorem 1.8, the  $p$ -semiregularization  $(X, \tau_1^s, \tau_2^s)$  of  $(X, \tau_1, \tau_2)$  is  $p$ -Hausdorff. Since now  $(X, \tau_1, \tau_2)$  is minimal  $p$ -Hausdorff,  $\tau_1^s = \tau_1$  and  $\tau_2^s = \tau_2$ . Therefore, by Theorem 1.4,  $(X, \tau_1, \tau_2)$  is  $p$ -semiregular.

Conversely, let  $(X, \tau_1, \tau_2)$  be a  $p$ -Hausdorff  $p - a - c$  and  $p$ -semiregular bitopological space and  $\mathcal{B}_i$  a  $\tau_i$ -open filterbase on  $X$  with  $\tau_j\text{-adh } \mathcal{B}_i = \{x_i\}$  ( $i, j = 1, 2, i \neq j$ ). By Theorem 3.2 and Lemma 1.13,  $x_i \in \tau_i\text{-lim } \mathcal{B}_i$ . Thus, by Theorem 4.3,  $(X, \tau_1, \tau_2)$  is minimal  $p$ -Hausdorff.

The following result is an immediate consequence of Theorems 1.7, 1.8, Proposition 2.2 and Theorem 4.4.

**Theorem 4.5**—If  $(X, \tau_1, \tau_2)$  is  $p$ -Hausdorff and  $p - a - c$ , then the  $p$ -semiregularization  $(X, \tau_1^s, \tau_2^s)$  of  $(X, \tau_1, \tau_2)$  is minimal  $p$ -Hausdorff.

Another well-known characterization of minimal Hausdorff topological spaces is the following: A Hausdorff topological space is minimal Hausdorff iff it is minimal semiregular Hausdorff. We note that necessity is obvious by Katetov's Theorem and that sufficiency is proved by Banaschewski<sup>1</sup> (p. 147).

Theorem 4.7 below is a bitopological analogue of the above characterization.

**Definition 4.6**—A bitopological space  $(X, \tau_1, \tau_2)$  is called minimal  $p$ -semiregular  $p$ -Hausdorff if it is  $p$ -semiregular and  $p$ -Hausdorff and if  $(X, \tau_3, \tau_4)$  is  $p$ -semiregular and  $p$ -Hausdorff with  $\tau_3 \subset \tau_1$  and  $\tau_4 \subset \tau_2$ , then  $\tau_1 = \tau_3$  and  $\tau_2 = \tau_4$ .

**Theorem 4.7**—A bitopological space  $(X, \tau_1, \tau_2)$  is minimal  $p$ -Hausdorff iff it is minimal  $p$ -semiregular  $p$ -Hausdorff.



PROOF : Necessity follows from Theorem 4.4. To show sufficiency assume that  $(X, \tau_1, \tau_2)$  is a minimal  $p$ -semiregular  $p$ -Hausdorff space which is not minimal  $p$ -Hausdorff. Then there exist two topologies  $\tau_3 \subset \tau_1$  and  $\tau_4 \subset \tau_2$  with  $\tau_3 \neq \tau_1$  or  $\tau_4 \neq \tau_2$  such that  $(X, \tau_3, \tau_4)$  is  $p$ -Hausdorff. By Theorems 1.7 and 1.8, the  $p$ -semiregularization  $(X, \tau_3^s, \tau_4^s)$  of  $(X, \tau_3, \tau_4)$  is  $p$ -semiregular and  $p$ -Hausdorff. Since now  $\tau_3^s \subset \tau_1$ ,  $\tau_4^s \subset \tau_2$  and  $\tau_3^s \neq \tau_1$  or  $\tau_4^s \neq \tau_2$ ,  $(X, \tau_1, \tau_2)$  is not minimal  $p$ -semiregular  $p$ -Hausdorff and the contradiction completes the proof.

The following result follows immediately from the definitions and from the fact that  $p$ -Hausdorffness is a projective and productive property<sup>11</sup>.

*Theorem 4.8*—If the non empty bitopological product  $(X, \tau_1, \tau_2)$  of the family  $((X_k, \tau_{1k}, \tau_{2k}))_{k \in K}$  [Swart<sup>11</sup>] is minimal  $p$ -Hausdorff, then each coordinate space  $(X_k, \tau_{1k}, \tau_{2k})$  is minimal  $p$ -Hausdorff.

Finally, by the following example it is shown that the converse of Theorem 4.8 does not hold. So, the concept of minimal  $p$ -Hausdorff spaces is not product invariant.

*Example 4.9*—Let  $\tau'_1$  be the discrete topology on  $\mathbb{R}$ ,  $\tau'_2$  the topology of finite complements on  $\mathbb{R}$ ,  $\tau''_1 = \tau'_2$  and  $\tau''_2 = \tau'_1$ . It is known<sup>8</sup> that the bitopological spaces  $(\mathbb{R}, \tau'_1, \tau'_2)$  and  $(\mathbb{R}, \tau''_1, \tau''_2)$  are minimal  $p$ -Hausdorff. Let now  $(\mathbb{R}^2, \tau_1, \tau_2)$  be the bitopological product of the above spaces. The classes  $\mathcal{B}_1 = \{\{x\} \times A : x \in \mathbb{R} \text{ and } \mathbb{R} - A \text{ finite}\}$  and  $\mathcal{B}_2 = \{A \times \{x\} : x \in \mathbb{R} \text{ and } \mathbb{R} - A \text{ finite}\}$  are clearly bases for the topologies  $\tau_1$  and  $\tau_2$  respectively. If  $p = (p_1, p_2)$  is a point of  $\mathbb{R}^2$  it is easily proved that the classes  $\mathcal{B}_1^* = \{A : A \in \mathcal{B}_1 \text{ and } p \notin A\} \cup \{(\mathbb{R} \times B) \cup C : \mathbb{R} - B \text{ finite, } C \in \mathcal{B}_1 \text{ and } p \in C\}$ ,  $\mathcal{B}_2^* = \{A : A \in \mathcal{B}_2 \text{ and } p \notin A\} \cup \{(B \times \mathbb{R}) \cup C : \mathbb{R} - B \text{ finite, } C \in \mathcal{B}_2 \text{ and } p \in C\}$  are bases for the topologies  $\tau_1^*$  and  $\tau_2^*$  on  $\mathbb{R}^2$ , which are strictly weaker than  $\tau_1$  and  $\tau_2$  respectively. Since now  $(\mathbb{R}^2, \tau_1^*, \tau_2^*)$  is  $p$ -Hausdorff it is obvious that the  $p$ -Hausdorff space  $(\mathbb{R}^2, \tau_1, \tau_2)$  is not minimal  $p$ -Hausdorff.

The same conclusion can be obtained immediately by Theorem 4.4. In fact it is easily proved that each  $B \in \mathcal{B}_1$  is (1,2)-regularly open and each  $B \in \mathcal{B}_2$  (2,1)-regularly open and hence  $(\mathbb{R}^2, \tau_1, \tau_2)$  is  $p$ -semiregular. However, since there exist a point  $c = (0, 0) \in \mathbb{R}^2$ , a  $\tau_1$ -open cover  $\mathcal{N} = \{\{x\} \times \mathbb{R} : x \in \mathbb{R}\}$  of  $\mathbb{R}^2 - \{c\}$  and a  $\tau_2$ -open neighbourhood  $V = \mathbb{R} \times \{0\}$  of  $c$ , such that for each finite subset  $\{x_1, x_2, \dots, x_n\}$  of  $\mathbb{R}$ ,  $[V]_1 \cup (\cup \{\{x_k\} \times \mathbb{R}\}_k : k = 1, 2, \dots, n) = (\mathbb{R} \times \{0\}) \cup (x_1, x_2, \dots, x_n) \times \mathbb{R} \neq \mathbb{R}^2$ ,

$(\mathbb{R}^2, \tau_1, \tau_2)$  is not  $p$ -a-c. Therefore, by Theorem 4.4.  $(\mathbb{R}^2, \tau_1, \tau_2)$  is not minimal  $p$ -Hausdorff.

## REFERENCES

1. B. Banaschewski, *Math. Nachr.* **13** (1955), 141-50.
2. T. Birsan, *An. Sti. Univ. Al. I. Cuza Iasi, n. Ser. Sect Ia* **15** (1969), 317-28.
3. I. E. Cooke, and I. L. Reilly, *J. London Math. Soc.* (2) **9** (1975), 518-22.
4. P. Fletcher, H. B. Hoyle, and C. W. Patty, *Duke Math. J.* **36** (1969), 325-31.
5. M. Katetov, *Časopis pest. mat.* **69** (1940), 36-49.
6. J. C. Kelly, *Proc. London Math. Soc.* (3) **13** (1963), 71-89.
7. M. N. Mukherjee, *Ann. Soc. Sci. Bruxelles, T.* **96 II**, (1982), 98-106.
8. T. G. Raghavan, and I. L. Reilly, *Kyungpook Math. J.* **17** Vo. 1, (1977), 57-65.
9. I. L. Reilly, *Nanta Math.* **5** Vo. 2, (1972), 2, 14-25.
10. M. K. Singal, and A. R. Singal, *Publ. Math. Debrecen* **21** (1974), 71-81.
11. J. Swart, *Nederl. Akad. Wetensch. Ser. A.* **74** *Indag. Math.* **33**, (1971), 135-45.



# CERTAIN CLASSES OF $p$ -VALENT FUNCTIONS WITH NEGATIVE COEFFICIENTS II

M. K. AOUF\*

Department of Mathematics, Faculty of Science, University of Mansoura, Mansoura  
Egypt

(Received 4 March 1987; after revision 8 January 1988)

Let  $P_p^*(\alpha, \beta)$  ( $p$  a fixed integer greater than zero,  $0 \leq \alpha < p$  and  $0 < \beta \leq 1$ )

denote the class of functions  $f(z) = z^p - \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} |a_{p+n}| z^{p+n}$  analytic and  $p$ -valent in  $|z| < 1$  for which

$$\left| \frac{\frac{f'(z)}{z^{p-1}} - p}{\frac{f'(z)}{z^{p-1}} + p - 2\alpha} \right| < \beta \quad (|z| < 1).$$

Sharp results concerning coefficients, a distortion theorem and the radius of convexity for the class  $P_p^*(\alpha, \beta)$  are determined. Furthermore, it is shown that the class  $P_p^*(\alpha, \beta)$  is closed under convex linear combinations. The extreme points of the class  $P_p^*(\alpha, \beta)$  are determined.

## 1. INTRODUCTION

Let  $S_p$  ( $p$  a fixed integer greater than zero) denote the class of functions of the form

$z^p + \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} |a_{p+n}| z^{p+n}$  that are analytic and  $p$ -valent in the unit disc  $|z| < 1$ . Also

let  $T_p$  ( $p$  a fixed integer greater than zero) denote the subclass of  $S_p$  consisting of functions that are analytic and  $p$ -valent and can be expressed in the form  $f(z) = z^p$

$- \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} |a_{p+n}| z^{p+n}$ .

A function  $f \in T_p$  is in  $T_p^*(\alpha, \beta)$  if and only if

$$\left| \frac{\frac{f'(z)}{z^{p-1}} - p}{\frac{f'(z)}{z^{p-1}} + p - 2\alpha} \right| < \beta \quad (|z| < 1) \quad \dots(1.1)$$

\* Department of Mathematics, Faculty of Science, University of Qatar, P.O. Box 2713, Doha-Qatar.

for  $\alpha$  ( $0 \leq \alpha < p$ ) and ( $0 < \beta \leq 1$ ). We note that Gupta and Jain<sup>3</sup> studied the class  $P_1^*(\alpha, \beta) = P^*(\alpha, \beta)$ . Two sub-classes  $S_p^*(\alpha, \beta)$  and  $C_p^*(\alpha, \beta)$  of  $T_p$ , obtained by replacing  $\frac{f'(z)}{z^{p-1}}$  with  $\frac{zf'(z)}{f(z)}$  and  $1 + \frac{zf''(z)}{f'(z)}$  respectively in (1.1), have been studied by the author<sup>1</sup>.

Schild<sup>4</sup> considered a subclass of  $T_1$  consisting of those polynomials that have  $|z| = 1$  as radius of univalence. For this class, he obtained a necessary and sufficient condition in terms of the coefficients, and with the aid of this he derived better results for certain quantities connected with the conformal mapping of univalent functions. Silverman<sup>5</sup> determined coefficient inequalities, as well as distortion, and covering theorems for the subclasses  $S^*(\alpha)$  and  $C^*(\alpha)$  of  $T_1$ ,  $0 \leq \alpha < 1$ , classes of starlike functions of order  $\alpha$  and convex functions of order  $\alpha$  respectively. Gupta and Jain<sup>2</sup> determined sharp results concerning coefficients, the distortion of functions belonging to  $S^*(\alpha, \beta)$  and  $C^*(\alpha, \beta)$ ,  $0 \leq \alpha < 1$ ,  $0 < \beta \leq 1$ , classes of starlike functions of order  $\alpha$  and type  $\beta$  and convex functions of order  $\alpha$  and type  $\beta$  respectively along with a representation formula for the functions in  $S^*(\alpha, \beta)$ . Furthermore, they have shown that the classes  $S^*(\alpha, \beta)$  and  $C^*(\alpha, \beta)$  are closed under convex linear combinations.

In this paper, sharp results concerning coefficients, a distortion theorem, and the radius of convexity for the class  $P_p^*(\alpha, \beta)$  are determined. In the last section we assert that the class  $P_p^*(\alpha, \beta)$  is closed under "arithmetic mean" and "convex linear combinations"; the extreme points of the class  $P_p^*(\alpha, \beta)$  are also determined.

## 2. COEFFICIENTS THEOREM

*Theorem 1*—A function  $f(z) = z^p - \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} |a_{p+n}| z^{p+n}$  is in  $P_p^*(\alpha, \beta)$  if and only if

$$\sum_{n=1}^{\infty} (p+n)(1+\beta) |a_{p+n}| \leq 2\beta(p-\alpha).$$

This result is sharp.

PROOF : Let  $|z| = 1$ . Then

$$\begin{aligned} & \left| \frac{f'(z)}{z^{p-1}} - p \right| - \beta \left| \frac{f'(z)}{z^{p-1}} + p - 2\alpha \right| = \left| - \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} (p+n) |a_{p+n}| z^n \right| \\ & \quad - \beta \left| 2(p-\alpha) - \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} (p+n) |a_{p+n}| z^n \right| \\ & \leq \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} (p+n)(1+\beta) |a_{p+n}| - 2\beta(p-\alpha) \\ & \leq 0, \text{ by hypothesis.} \end{aligned}$$



Hence, by the maximum modulus theorem,  $f \in P_p^*(\alpha, \beta)$ .

For the converse, assume that

$$\left| \frac{\frac{f'(z)}{z^{p-1}} - p}{\frac{f'(z)}{z^{p-1}} + p - 2\alpha} \right| = \left| \frac{- \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} (p+n) |a_{p+n}| z^n}{2(p-\alpha) - \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} (p+n) |a_{p+n}| z^n} \right| < \beta \quad (|z| < 1).$$

Since  $|\operatorname{Re}(z)| \leq |z|$  for all  $z$ , we have

$$\operatorname{Re} \left\{ \frac{\sum_{n=1}^{\infty} (p+n) |a_{p+n}| z^n}{2(p-\alpha) - \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} (p+n) |a_{p+n}| z^n} \right\} < \beta. \quad \dots(2.1)$$

Choose values of  $z$  on the real axis so that  $\frac{f'(z)}{z^{p-1}}$  is real. Upon clearing the denominator in (2.1) and letting  $z \rightarrow 1$  through real values, we obtain

$$\sum_{n=1}^{\infty} (p+n) |a_{p+n}| \leq 2\beta(p-\alpha) - \beta \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} (p+n) |a_{p+n}|.$$

This gives the required condition.

The result is sharp, the extremal function being

$$f(z) = z^p - \frac{2\beta(p-\alpha)}{(p+1)(1+\beta)} z^{p+1}.$$

### 3. DISTORTION THEOREM

*Theorem 2*— If  $f \in P_p^*(\alpha, \beta)$ , then

$$r^p - \frac{2\beta(p-\alpha)}{(p+1)(1+\beta)} r^{p+1} \leq |f(z)| \leq r^p + \frac{2\beta(p-\alpha)}{(p+1)(1+\beta)} r^{p+1} \quad (|z| = r) \quad \dots(3.1)$$

and

$$pr^{p-1} - \frac{2\beta(p-\alpha)}{(1+\beta)} r^p \leq |f'(z)| \leq pr^{p-1} + \frac{2\beta(p-\alpha)}{(1+\beta)} r^p \quad (|z| = r). \quad \dots(3.2)$$

PROOF : In view of Theorem 1, we have

$$\sum_{n=1}^{\infty} |a_{p+n}| \leq \frac{2\beta(p-\alpha)}{(p+1)(1+\beta)}.$$

Hence

$$\begin{aligned} |f(z)| &\leq r^p + \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} |a_{p+n}| r^{p+1} \\ &\leq r^p + \frac{2\beta(p-\alpha)}{(p+1)(1+\beta)} r^{p+1} \end{aligned}$$

and

$$\begin{aligned} |f(z)| &\geq r^p - \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} |a_{p+n}| r^{p+1} \\ &\geq r^p - \frac{2\beta(p-\alpha)}{(p+1)(1+\beta)} r^{p+1}. \end{aligned}$$

Thus (3.1) follows.

Also,

$$\begin{aligned} |f'(z)| &\leq pr^{p-1} + \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} (p+n) |a_{p+n}| r^p \\ &\leq pr^{p-1} + \frac{2\beta(p-\alpha)}{(1+\beta)} r^p \end{aligned}$$

and

$$\begin{aligned} |f'(z)| &\geq pr^{p-1} - \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} (p+n) |a_{p+n}| r^p \\ &\geq pr^{p-1} - \frac{2\beta(p-\alpha)}{(1+\beta)} r^p. \end{aligned}$$

This completes the proof of the theorem.

*Remark :* The bounds in (3.1) and (3.2) are sharp since the equalities are attained for the function

$$f(z) = z^p - \frac{2\beta(p-\alpha)}{(p+1)(1+\beta)} z^{p+1} \quad (z = \pm r).$$

*Theorem 3*—Let  $f \in P_p^*(\alpha, \beta)$ . Then the disc  $|z| < 1$  is mapped onto a domain that contains the disc



$|w| < \frac{(p+1) + \beta(1-p+2\alpha)}{(p+1)(1+\beta)}$ . The result is sharp with extremal function  $z^p - \frac{2\beta(p-\alpha)}{(p+1)(1+\beta)} z^{p+1}$ .

PROOF : The result follow upon letting  $r \rightarrow 1$  in (3.1).

*Theorem 4:*—If  $f \in P_p^*(\alpha, \beta)$ , then  $f$  is convex in the disc  $|z| < r = r(\alpha, \beta, p)$ , where

$$r(\alpha, \beta, p) = \inf_n \left\{ \frac{p^2(1+\beta)}{2\beta(p+n)(p-\alpha)} \right\}^{1/n}, \quad n = 1, 2, 3, \dots$$

This result is sharp, the external function being of the form

$$f(z) = z^p - \frac{2\beta(p-\alpha)}{(p+n)(1+\beta)} z^{p+n}.$$

PROOF : It suffices to show that  $\left| \left( 1 + \frac{z f''(z)}{f'(z)} \right) - p \right| \leq p$  for  $|z| \leq 1$ .

First, we note that

$$\begin{aligned} \left| \left( 1 + \frac{z f''(z)}{f'(z)} \right) - p \right| &= \left| \frac{z f''(z) + (1-p)f'(z)}{f'(z)} \right| \\ &\leq \left\{ \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} n(p+n) |a_{p+n}| |z|^n \right\} / \left\{ p - \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} (p+n) |a_{p+n}| |z|^n \right\}. \end{aligned}$$

Thus the result follows if

$$\sum_{n=1}^{\infty} n(p+n) |a_{p+n}| |z|^n \leq p \left\{ p - \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} (p+n) |a_{p+n}| |z|^n \right\}$$

which is equivalent to

$$\sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \left( \frac{p+n}{p} \right)^2 |a_{p+n}| |z|^n \leq 1.$$

But by Theorem 1,

$$\sum_{n=1}^{\infty} (p+n)(1+\beta) |a_{p+n}| \leq 2\beta(p-\alpha).$$

Hence  $f$  is convex if

$$\left( \frac{p+n}{p} \right)^2 |z|^n \leq \frac{(p+n)(1+\beta)}{2\beta(p-\alpha)}, \quad n = 1, 2, 3, \dots$$

that is,

$$|z| \leq \left\{ \frac{p^2 (1 + \beta)}{2\beta (p + n) (p - \alpha)} \right\}^{1/n}, \quad n = 1, 2, 3, \dots$$

This completes the proof.

#### 4. CLOSURE THEOREMS

In this section we assert that the class  $P_p^* (\alpha, \beta)$  is closed under "arithmetic mean" and "convex linear combinations".

*Theorem 5*— If  $f(z) = z^p - \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} |a_{p+n}| z^{p+n}$  and

$g(z) = z^p - \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} |b_{p+n}| z^{p+n}$  are in  $P_p^* (\alpha, \beta)$ , then

$$h(z) = z^p - \frac{1}{2} \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} |a_{p+n} + b_{p+n}| z^{p+n}$$

is also in  $P_p^* (\alpha, \beta)$ .

*Theorem 6*— Let  $f_p(z) = z^p$ ,  $f_{p+n}(z) = z^p - \frac{2\beta(p-\alpha)}{(p+n)(1+\beta)} z^{p+n}$ , ( $n = 1, 2, \dots$ ). Then  $f \in P_p^* (\alpha, \beta)$  if and only if it can be expressed in the form  $f(z) = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \lambda_{p+n} f_{p+n}(z)$ , where  $\lambda_{p+n} \geq 0$ , and  $\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \lambda_{p+n} = 1$ .

Proofs of Theorems 5 and 6 follow along the same lines as the proofs of Theorems 8 and 9 in Aouf<sup>1</sup>. The details are omitted.

*Corollary* — The extreme points of  $P_p^* (\alpha, \beta)$  are the functions  $f_p(z) = z^p$  and  $f_{p+n}(z) = z^p - \frac{2\beta(p-\alpha)}{(p+n)(1+\beta)} z^{p+n}$ , ( $n = 1, 2, 3, \dots$ ).

#### ACKNOWLEDGEMENT

Author thanks Professor M. O. Reade of the University of Michigan for his kind encouragement and valuable remarks in the preparation of this paper. He is grateful to the referees for their valuable comments.

#### REFERENCES

1. M. K. Aouf, "Certain classes of  $p$ -valent functions with negative coefficients", submitted.
2. V. P. Gupta, and P. K. Jain, *Bull. Austr. Math. Soc.* **14** (1976), 409-16.

3. V. P. Gupta, and P. K. Jain, "Certain classes of univalent functions with negative coefficients II", *Bull. Austr. Math. Soc.* **14** (1976), 467-73.
4. A. Schild, *Proc. Am. Math. Soc.* **5** (1954), 115-20.
5. Herb Silverman, *Proc. Am. Math. Soc.* **51** (1975), 109-16.



# SOME QUADRATIC TRANSFORMATIONS OF BASIC HYPERGEOMETRIC SERIES AND IDENTITIES IN RAMANUJAN'S 'LOST' NOTE BOOK

A. VERMA

*Department of Mathematics, University of Roorkee, Roorkee 247667*

AND

V. K. JAIN

*Department of Mathematics, Bareilly College, Bareilly*

(Received 18 June 1987; after revision 2 February 1988)

One of the identities of Ramanujan's 'lost' note book on Partial theta function and his identities related to Stacks with summits were proved by Andrews by using  $q$ -difference equations as they did not fit in the known transformation theory of basic hypergeometric series. In this paper quadratic transformations of basic hypergeometric series are obtained which besides containing Ramanujan's identities as special case also yield more general analytical identities of the same nature.

## 1. INTRODUCTION

Andrews<sup>6</sup> had proved identities on partial theta functions, mentioned without proof, in Ramanujan's 'Lost' note book (see Andrews<sup>5</sup> for historical background of the document). The elegance of Andrews proof lies in his observation that practically all the Ramanujan's identities on partial theta functions, except the identity [Andrews<sup>6</sup>, (1.2)  $R$ ]

$$\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{[q^{1+n}; q]_n q^n}{[-aq, -q/a; q]_n} = (1+a) \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} (-a)^n q^{n^2+n} - a \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{(-a^3)^n (1+aq^{2n+1}) q^{\frac{3}{2}n^2 + 2n}}{[-aq, -q/a; q]_{\infty}} \dots (1.1)$$

are all special cases of a single transformation of basic hypergeometric series. Agarwal<sup>1</sup> had noted that the transformation of basic hypergeometric series, proved in an ingenious way by Andrews<sup>6</sup> for obtaining Ramanujan's identities on partial theta functions, is a special case of a three-term relation between  ${}_3\phi_2$ 's given by Sears<sup>14</sup>. This observa-

tion lead Agarwal<sup>1</sup> to obtain not only three term relation but also four-term relations between partial theta functions

For the innocent looking identity (1.1) Andrews<sup>6</sup> was unable to find any generalization and this forced him to prove (1.1) by a lengthy tour de force. According to his own reckoning it would be of interest to find a generalization of (1.1) which would place it in an appropriate place in the transformation theory of basic hypergeometric series. In section 3 we show that (1.1) could be deduced from the quadratic transformation

$$\begin{aligned}
 {}_3\phi_2 \left[ \begin{matrix} a, c, d; q; \frac{aqx}{cd} \\ aq/c, aq/d \end{matrix} \right] &= \frac{[ax; q]_{\infty}}{[x; q]_{\infty}} \\
 &\quad {}_5\phi_4 \left[ \begin{matrix} \sqrt{a}, -\sqrt{a}, \sqrt{aq}, -\sqrt{aq}, aq/cd; q; q \\ aq/c, aq/d, ax, q/x \end{matrix} \right] \\
 &\quad + \frac{[a, aq/cd, axq/c; axq/d; q]_{\infty}}{[aq/c, aq/d, aqx/cd, 1/x; q]_{\infty}} \\
 &\quad {}_5\phi_4 \left[ \begin{matrix} x\sqrt{a}, -x\sqrt{a}, x\sqrt{aq}, -x\sqrt{aq}, axq/cd; q; q \\ axq/c, axq/d, xq, ax^2 \end{matrix} \right].
 \end{aligned}
 \tag{1.2}$$

Throughout the paper we will assume  $|q| < 1$ ,  $[a; q]_n = (1 - a)(1 - aq) \dots (1 - aq^{n-1})$ ,  $[a; q]_0 = 1$ ,  $[a; q]_{\infty} = \prod_{j=0}^{\infty} (1 - aq^j)$ , abbreviate  $[a_1; q]_n [a_2; q]_n \dots [a_r; q]_n$  by  $[a_1, a_2, \dots, a_r; q]_n$  and define the basic hypergeometric series as

$$\begin{aligned}
 {}_{p+1}\phi_{p+r} \left[ \begin{matrix} a_1, a_2, \dots, a_{p+1}; q; x \\ b_1, b_2, \dots, b_{p+r} \end{matrix} \right] \\
 = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{[a_1, a_2, \dots, a_{p+1}; q]_n (-1)^{nr} x^n q^{nr(n-1)/2}}{[q, b_1, b_2, \dots, b_{p+r}; q]_n}.
 \end{aligned}$$

The basic hypergeometric series  ${}_{p+1}\phi_{p+r}$  converges for all positive integral values of  $r$  and for all  $x$ , except when  $r = 0$  it converges only for  $|x| < 1$ . Following Askey-Wilson<sup>8</sup> the basic hypergeometric series  ${}_{p+1}\phi_p \left[ \begin{matrix} a_1, a_2, \dots, a_{p+1}; q; x \\ b_1, b_2, \dots, b_p \end{matrix} \right]$  would be called balanced if  $qa_1 a_2, \dots, a_{p+1} = b_1 b_2 \dots b_p$ , well-poised if  $qa_1 = a_2 b_1 = a_3 b_2 = \dots = a_{p+1} b_p$  and nearly-poised if any one of the above equalities breaks down. Furthermore, the well-poised basic hypergeometric series

$${}_{p+3}\phi_{p+2} \left[ \begin{matrix} a, q\sqrt{a}, -q\sqrt{a}, a_1, a_2, \dots, a_p; q; x \\ \sqrt{a}, -\sqrt{a}, \frac{qa}{a_1}, \frac{qa}{a_2}, \dots, \frac{qa}{a_p} \end{matrix} \right]$$

would be abbreviated by  ${}_{p+3}W_{p+2} [a; a_1 a_2, \dots, a_p; q; x]$  and called as a very well-poised basic hypergeometric series.

It is also shown in Section 3 that the quadratic transformation

$$\begin{aligned} {}_4\phi_3 \left[ \begin{matrix} a, q\sqrt{a}, b, c; q; xq/bc \end{matrix} \right] &= \frac{[xq, -x/\sqrt{a}; q]_\infty}{[x/a, -xq/\sqrt{a}; q]_\infty} \\ &\times {}_5\phi_4 \left[ \begin{matrix} \sqrt{aq}, -\sqrt{aq}, q\sqrt{a}, -\sqrt{a}, aq/bc; q; q \\ aq/b, aq/c, xq, aq/x \end{matrix} \right] \\ &+ \frac{[aq, xq/b, xq/c, aq/bc, xq/a, xq/\sqrt{a}, -\sqrt{a}; q]_\infty}{[aq/b, aq/c, xq/bc, aq/x, x/a, -xq/\sqrt{a}, -q\sqrt{a}; q]_\infty} \\ &\times {}_5\phi_4 \left[ \begin{matrix} x\sqrt{q}/\sqrt{a}, -xq/\sqrt{a}, xq/\sqrt{a}, -x/\sqrt{a}, xq/bc; q; q \\ xq/a, x^2q/a, xq/b, xq/c \end{matrix} \right] \quad \dots(1.3) \end{aligned}$$

could be used to obtain the identity (c. f. (1.1))

$$\begin{aligned} \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{[q; q^2]_n [-q; q]_{n-1} q^n}{[aq, q/a; q]_n} &= \frac{1-a}{1+a} \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} a^n q^{n^2} \\ &- \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{(1-a^2 q^{4n+2}) a^{3n} q^{3n^2+n}}{[-a, q/a; q]_\infty} \quad \dots(1.4) \end{aligned}$$

Furthermore, the transformation between very well-poised  ${}_5W_4$  and balanced  ${}_5\phi_4$  viz.,

$$\begin{aligned} {}_5W_4 [a; b, c; q; x\sqrt{aq}/bc] &= (1-x^2) \frac{[xq\sqrt{aq}; q]_\infty}{[x/\sqrt{aq}; q]_\infty} \\ &\times {}_5\phi_4 \left[ \begin{matrix} \sqrt{aq}, -\sqrt{aq}, q\sqrt{a}, -q\sqrt{a}, aq/bc; q; q \\ aq/b, aq/c, xq\sqrt{aq}, q\sqrt{aq}/x \end{matrix} \right] \\ &+ \frac{[aq, aq/bc, x\sqrt{aq}/b, x\sqrt{aq}/c; q]_\infty}{[aq/b, aq/c, x\sqrt{aq}/bc, \sqrt{aq}/x; q]_\infty} \\ &\times {}_5\phi_4 \left[ \begin{matrix} x, -x, x\sqrt{q}, -x\sqrt{q}, x\sqrt{aq}/bc; q; q \\ x^2q, x\sqrt{aq}/b, x\sqrt{aq}/c, x\sqrt{q}/\sqrt{a} \end{matrix} \right] \quad \dots(1.5) \end{aligned}$$

yield the following identity analogue to (1.1) and (1.4)

$$\begin{aligned} (1+a) \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{[q; q]_{2n+1} q^{n+1}}{[q; q]_n [aq, q/a; q]_{n+1}} &= \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{(1-a^2 q^{4n+2}) a^{3n+1} q^{3n^2+n}}{[aq, 1/a; q]_\infty} \\ &- \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} (1-q^{2n+1}) a^{n+1} q^{n^2} \quad \dots(1.6) \end{aligned}$$



In fact (1.2) and (1.5) are known quadratic transformations of Gasper and Rahman<sup>12</sup> [(1.27) and (1.35) respectively]. They deduced (1.2) and (1.5) by letting  $n \rightarrow \infty$  in Bailey's transformations<sup>10</sup> [(1) and (2)] between terminating nearly-poised basic hypergeometric series and terminating very well-poised basic hypergeometric series. The transformation (1.2) is a non-terminating version of Sears-Carlitz formula [Sears<sup>15</sup> 4.1, Carlitz<sup>11</sup>, (2.4)]. As the proofs of (1.2), (1.3) and (1.5) follow on the same lines, hence, for completeness sake, alternative proofs of (1.2) and (1.5) are given in section 2, along with that of (1.3).

Andrews<sup>7</sup> had proved the lemmas :

*Lemma 1A*—For each nonnegative integer  $m$ ,

$$[q; q^2]_m \sum_{n=0}^{2m} \frac{(-)^n}{[q; q]_n [a; q]_{2m-n}} = \sum_{n=0}^m \frac{(-)^n q^{n^2}}{[q^2; q^2]_{m-n} [aq; q^2]_n} \dots (1.7)$$

*Lemma 2A*—For each positive integer  $m$ ,

$$[q; q^2]_m \sum_{n=0}^{2m-1} \frac{(-)^n}{[q; q]_n [a; q]_{2m-n-1}} = \left(1 - \frac{a}{q}\right) \sum_{n=1}^m \frac{(-)^n q^{n^2}}{[q^2; q^2]_{m-n} [a; q^2]_n} \dots (1.8)$$

for proving some identities of 'lost' note book of Ramanujan. Andrews<sup>7</sup> (p. 34) had remarked that Professor R. Askey had conjectured that the above Lemmas 1A and 2A should follow from some quadratic transformation of basic hypergeometric series. In Section 4, Professor Askey's conjecture is proved by obtaining the quadratic transformation

$${}_5\phi_4 \left[ \begin{matrix} a^2, b^2, q, x, -x; q; q \\ ab\sqrt{q}, -ab\sqrt{q}, c, x^2 q/c \end{matrix} \right] = {}_4\phi_3 \left[ \begin{matrix} a^2, b^2, q^2, x^2; q^2; q^2 \\ a^2 b^2 q, cq, x^2 q^2/c \end{matrix} \right] \dots (1.9)$$

( $a^2, b^2$ , or  $x$  is of the form  $q^{-n}$ ,  $n$  a non-negative integer). The transformation (1.9) for  $a = q^{-m}$ ,  $b \rightarrow \infty$ ,  $x \rightarrow 0$  reduces to Lemma 1A, whereas for  $a = q^{1/2-m}$ ,  $b \rightarrow \infty$ ,  $x \rightarrow 0$ , it gives Lemma 2A and for  $b \rightarrow \infty$ ,  $a = q^{-m}$ ,  $c, x \rightarrow 0$ , (1.9) yields yet another formula of Andrews<sup>6</sup> (4.3) which was his key result for proving an identity of Ramanujan on partial theta functions. Using (1.9), following two generalizations of Ramanujan's identities [Andrews<sup>7</sup>, (1.10) (1.11)] are obtained

$$\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{[x^2; q^2]_n [q^{1+n}, q]_{\infty}}{[-x^2, -q; q]_n} q^{n(n+1)/2} +$$

(equation continued on p. 772)

$$\begin{aligned}
& + \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{[x^2; q^2]_n [-q^{1+n}; q]_{\infty} (-)^n q^{n(n+1)/2}}{[-x^2, -q; q]_n} \\
& = 2 [-q; q]_{\infty} \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{[x^2; q^2]_n (-q)^{n(n+1)/2}}{[-q^2; q^2]_n [x^2; -q]_n} \quad \dots(1.10)
\end{aligned}$$

$$\begin{aligned}
& \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{[x^2; q^2]_{n+1} [q^{1+n}; q]_{\infty} q^{n(n+1)/2}}{[-q; q]_n [-x^2 q; q]_{n+1}} \\
& - \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{[x^2; q^2]_{n+1} [-q^{n+1}; q]_{\infty} (-)^n q^{n/2(n+1)}}{[-q; q^2]_n [-x^2 q; q]_{n+1}} \\
& = 4 [-q; q]_{\infty} \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \frac{[x^2; q^2]_{2n} (-)^n q^{2n^2}}{[-q; q^2]_{2n} [x^4 q^4; q^4]_n} \quad \dots(1.11)
\end{aligned}$$

which for  $x \rightarrow 0$  reduce to Ramanujan's identities Andrews<sup>7</sup>, (1.10) and (1.11).

## 2. PROOFS OF (1.2), (1.3) AND (1.5)

In the transformation connecting non-terminating nearly-poised  ${}_5\phi_4$  series of the first kind and very well-poised  ${}_{12}\phi_{11}$  [Verma and Jain<sup>10</sup>, 7.1] setting  $e = a^2 q/dk$ ,  $c = 1$ , we get

$$\begin{aligned}
& {}_{10}W_9 [k; k/a, \sqrt{a}, -\sqrt{a}, \sqrt{aq}, -\sqrt{aq}, f, k^2 q/af; q; q] \\
& + \frac{[kq/af, kq, a, f, kq^2/f, k/a, k^4 q^3/a^3 f^2; q]_{\infty}}{[kq/f, aq, k^2 q/a, af/kq, k^3 q^3/a^2 f^2, k^2 q/a^2 f, kq/a; q]_{\infty}} \\
& \times {}_{10}W_9 \left[ \frac{k^3 q^2}{a^2 f^2}; \frac{k^2 q}{a^2 f}, \frac{kq}{f\sqrt{a}}, -\frac{kq}{f\sqrt{a}}, \frac{kq^{3/2}}{f\sqrt{a}}, \right. \\
& \quad \left. -\frac{kq^{3/2}}{f\sqrt{a}}, \frac{kq}{a}, \frac{k^2 q}{af}; q; q \right] \\
& = \frac{[kq/af, k^2 q/a^2, kq, k^2 q/af; q]_{\infty}}{[kq/f, kq/a, k^2 q/a, k^2 q/a^2 f; q]_{\infty}} \quad \dots (2.1)
\end{aligned}$$

In (2.1) replacing  $k$  by  $afx/q$  and then letting  $f \rightarrow 0$ , we get

$${}_4\phi_3 \left[ \frac{\sqrt{a}, -\sqrt{a}, \sqrt{aq}, -\sqrt{aq}; q; q}{aq, ax, q/x} \right] + \frac{[x, a, aqx; q]_{\infty}}{[aq, ax, 1/x; q]_{\infty}}$$

(equation continued on p. 773)

$${}_4\phi_3 \left[ \begin{matrix} x\sqrt{a}, -x\sqrt{a}, x\sqrt{aq}, -x\sqrt{aq}; q; q \\ axq, ax^2, xq \end{matrix} \right] = \frac{[x; q]_\infty}{[ax; q]_\infty} \dots (2.2)$$

In (2.2) replacing  $a$  and  $x$  by  $aq^{2n}$  and  $xq^{-n}$  respectively and multiplying both sides by

$$\frac{[aq^n, xaq^n, q^{1+n}/\sqrt{c}; q]_\infty [a, d, c; q]_n q^{n(n+1)/2}}{[a; q]_\infty [q, aq/c, aq/d; q]_n} (-aq/cd)^n$$

and summing with respect to  $n$  from 0 to  $\infty$ , we get (1.2), on diagonalizing the double sums on the left-hand-side and summing the resulting inner  ${}_6\phi_5$  by Sears<sup>15</sup> (6.2).

*Proof of (1.3)*—In the transformation [Verma and Jain<sup>16</sup>, 7.7] between non terminating nearly poised  ${}_6\phi_5$  of the first kind and very well-poised  ${}_{12}W_{11}$ : ( $e = a^2 q/kcd$ )

$$\begin{aligned} & \frac{[\sqrt{a}, aq/c, uq/d, aq/e, a^2 f q/k^2; q]_\infty}{[q\sqrt{a}, a, c, d, e, f; q]_\infty} {}_6\phi_5 \left[ \begin{matrix} a, q\sqrt{a}, c, d, e, f; q; q \\ \sqrt{a}, aq/c, aq/d, aq/e, a^2 q f/k^2 \end{matrix} \right] \\ & - \frac{k^2 [k^2 q/afc, k^2 q/afd, k^2 q/afe, k^2 q/a^2 f, k^2/fa^{3/2}; q]_\infty}{a^2 f [k^2/af, k^2 c/a^2 f, k^2 d/a^2 f, k^2 e/a^2 f, k^2/a^2, k^2 q/fa^{3/2}; q]_\infty} \\ & \times {}_6\phi_5 \left[ \begin{matrix} k^2/a^2, k^2 q/fa^{3/2}, k^2 c/a^2 f, k^2 d/a^2 f, k^2 e/a^2 f, k^2/af; q; q \\ k^2/fa^{3/2}, k^2 q/afc, k^2 q/afd, k^2 q/afe, k^2 q/a^2 f \end{matrix} \right] \\ & = \frac{[a^2 f q/k^2, k^2/a^2 f, k/a, k^2/a, aq/c, aq/d, aq/e, kq/f, \sqrt{a}, -k/f\sqrt{a}, -kq/\sqrt{a}; q]_\infty}{[f, c, d, e, a, k/af, k^2/a^2, kq, k^2/af, q\sqrt{a} - \frac{kq}{f\sqrt{a}}, -\frac{k}{\sqrt{a}}; q]_\infty} \\ & {}_{12}W_{11} [k; kc/a, kd/a, ke/a, f, k^2/af, \sqrt{aq}, q\sqrt{a}, -\sqrt{aq} - \sqrt{a}; q; q] \\ & + \frac{[kc/a, kd/a, ke/a, a^2 q f/k^2, k^2/a^2 f, kq/cf, kq/df, kq/ef, k^4 q/a^3 f^2, k^2/fa^{3/2}; q]_\infty}{[c, d, e, a f/k, k^2/a^2, k^2/af, k^2 c/a^2 f, k^2 d/a^2 f, k^2 e/a^2 f, k^3 q/a f^2, k^2 q/fa^{3/2}; q]_\infty} \\ & {}_{12}W_{11} [k^3/a^2 f^2, k^2 c/a^2 f, k^2 d/a^2 f, k^2 e/a^2 f, k/a, k^2/af, k\sqrt{q}/f\sqrt{a}, \\ & - k\sqrt{q}/f\sqrt{a}, kq/f\sqrt{a}, -k/f\sqrt{a}; q; q], \end{aligned}$$

multiplying both sides by  $[c; q]_\infty$  and setting  $c = 1$  (such that  $e = a^2 q/kd$ ), we get

$$\begin{aligned} & {}_{10}W_9 [k; k/a, f, k^2/af, \sqrt{aq} - \sqrt{aq}, q\sqrt{a}, -\sqrt{a}; q; q] \\ & + \frac{[kq/a, f, q\sqrt{a}, k/af, kq/f\sqrt{a}, -k/\sqrt{a}, k^2/fa^{3/2}, k^2 d/a^2 f, k^4 q/a^3 f^2; q]_\infty}{[aq, \sqrt{a}, af/k, -k/f\sqrt{a}, -kq/\sqrt{a}, k^2/a, k^2/a^2 f, k^2 d/a^2 f, k^2 q/fa^{3/2}, \frac{k^2 q}{a^2 f^2}; q]_\infty} \\ & {}_{10}W_9 \left[ \frac{k^3}{a^2 f^2}, \frac{k^2}{a^2 f}, \frac{k}{a}, \frac{k^3}{af}, \frac{k}{f}\sqrt{\frac{q}{a}}, -\frac{k}{f}\sqrt{\frac{q}{a}}, \frac{kq}{f\sqrt{a}}, -\frac{k}{f\sqrt{a}}; q; q \right] \\ & = \frac{[k/af, k^2/a^2 kq, k^2/af, -kq/f\sqrt{a}, -k\sqrt{a}; q]_\infty}{[k^2/a^2 f, k/a, k^2/a, kq/f, -k/f\sqrt{a}, -kq/\sqrt{a}; q]_\infty} \dots (2.3) \end{aligned}$$



In (2.3) setting  $k = xf$  and letting  $f \rightarrow 0$ , we get on some reduction

$$\begin{aligned} & \frac{[aq, xq, aq/x; q]_{\infty}}{[\sqrt{aq}, q\sqrt{a}, -\sqrt{aq}, -\sqrt{a}; q]_{\infty}} {}_4\phi_3 \left[ \begin{matrix} \sqrt{aq}, q\sqrt{a}, -\sqrt{aq}, -\sqrt{a}; q; q \\ aq, xq, aq/x \end{matrix} \right] \\ & - \frac{x [xq, xq/a, xq/\sqrt{a}; q]_{\infty}}{a [-x/\sqrt{a}; q]_{\infty}} {}_4\phi_3 \left[ \begin{matrix} x\sqrt{q}/\sqrt{a}, -x\sqrt{q}/\sqrt{a}, xq/\sqrt{a}, -x\sqrt{a}; q; q \\ xq, xq/a, x^2q/a \end{matrix} \right] \\ & = \frac{[aq/x, x/a, -xq/\sqrt{a}, -q\sqrt{a}; q]_{\infty}}{[-\sqrt{a}, -x/\sqrt{a}; q]_{\infty}}. \end{aligned} \quad \dots(2.4)$$

In (2.4) replacing  $a$  and  $x$  by  $aq^r$  and  $xq^r$  respectively and multiplying both sides by

$$\frac{[a, b, c; q]_r [aq^2; q^2]_r}{[q, aq/b, aq/c; q]_r [a; q^2]_r} \left( -\frac{a}{bc} \right)^r q^{r(r+3)/2}$$

summing with respect to  $r$  from 0 to  $\infty$ , we get (1.3) on diagonalizing both the double sums on the left-hand side and summing the resulting inner terminating series.

*Proof of (1.5)*—In the transformation [Verma and Jain<sup>16</sup>, § 7, equation of page 25-26] between non-terminating nearly-poised  ${}_7\phi_6$  of the first kind and very well-poised  ${}_{12}W_{11}$  first replacing  $f$  by  $f^2$  and then setting  $c = 1$  and  $e = \frac{a^2 q}{dk}$  we get

$$\begin{aligned} & {}_{10}W_9 [k; k/a, k^2/faq, f, \sqrt{aq}, -\sqrt{aq}, q\sqrt{a}; -q\sqrt{a}; q; q] \\ & + \left[ \begin{matrix} f, kq, \frac{k}{a}, \frac{k}{f}, \frac{k^2 d}{fa^2 q}, \frac{k^4}{f^2 a^3 q^2}, \frac{k}{afq}, \frac{k^3}{af^2}; q \end{matrix} \right]_{\infty} \\ & + \left[ \begin{matrix} \frac{kq}{f}, \frac{k^2}{a}, \frac{k}{aq}, \frac{k^2}{af^2 q}, \frac{afq}{k}, \frac{k^2}{a^2 fq}, \frac{k^2 d}{a^2 fq}, \frac{k^2}{a^2 f^2 q}; q \end{matrix} \right]_{\infty} \\ & {}_{10}W_9 \left[ \begin{matrix} \frac{k^3}{a^2 f^2 q^2}, \frac{k^2}{a^2 fq}, \frac{k}{f\sqrt{aq}}, \frac{k}{f\sqrt{aq}}, \frac{k}{f\sqrt{a}}, \frac{k}{f\sqrt{a}}, \frac{k^2}{faq}, \frac{k}{aq}; q; q \end{matrix} \right] \\ & = \left[ \begin{matrix} \frac{k^2}{a^2 q}, \frac{k^2}{afq}, \frac{k^2}{afq^2}, \frac{k}{af^2}, kq; q \end{matrix} \right]_{\infty} \left| \begin{matrix} \frac{kq}{f}, \frac{k^2}{a}, \frac{k}{aq}, \frac{k^2}{af^2 q}, \frac{k^2}{a^2 fq}; q \end{matrix} \right]_{\infty}. \end{aligned} \quad \dots (2.5)$$

In (2.5) replacing  $k$  by  $xf\sqrt{aq}$  and then letting  $f \rightarrow 0$  we get

$$\begin{aligned} & [xq\sqrt{aq}, q\sqrt{aq}/x; q]_{\infty} {}_4\phi_3 \left[ \begin{matrix} \sqrt{aq}, -\sqrt{aq}, q\sqrt{a}, -q\sqrt{a}; q; q \\ aq, xq\sqrt{aq}, q\sqrt{aq}/x \end{matrix} \right] \\ & - \frac{x}{\sqrt{aq}} \frac{[x\sqrt{aq}, x\sqrt{q}/\sqrt{a}, x^2q; q]_{\infty}}{[x^2; q]_{\infty}} \\ & \times {}_4\phi_3 \left[ \begin{matrix} x, -x, x\sqrt{q}, -x\sqrt{aq}; q; q \\ x\sqrt{aq}, x\sqrt{q}/\sqrt{a}, x^2q \end{matrix} \right] \end{aligned}$$

(equation continued on p. 775)

$$= \frac{[x/\sqrt{aq}, x^2q, q\sqrt{aq}/x; q]_{\infty}}{[x^2; q]_{\infty}} \quad \dots(2.6)$$

In (2.6) replacing  $a$  by  $aq^{2r}$ , and then multiplying both sides by

$$\frac{[a, b, c; q]_r [aq^2; q^2]_r}{[q, aq/b, aq/c; q]_r [a; q^2]_r} \left( -\frac{a}{bc} \right)^r q^{r(r+3)/2}$$

and summing with respect to  $r$  from 0 to  $\infty$ , we get (1.5) on diagonalizing both the double series on the left-hand side and summing the inter terminating basic hypergeometric series.

### 3. PROOFS OF (1.1), (1.4) AND (1.6)

We begin this section by first proving the simple quadratic transformations :

$$[q; q^2]_{\infty} {}_3\phi_2 \left[ \begin{matrix} a, b, -b; q; q \\ b, 0 \end{matrix} \right] = [aq; q^2]_{\infty} {}_2\phi_1 \left[ \begin{matrix} a, 0; q^2; q^2 \\ b^2q \end{matrix} \right] \quad \dots(3.1)$$

$$\begin{aligned} [-aq, q; q]_{\infty} {}_3\phi_2 \left[ \begin{matrix} a\sqrt{q}, -a\sqrt{q}, aq; q; q \\ a^2q, 0 \end{matrix} \right] \\ = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} (1 + aq^{2n+1}) (-a^3)^n q^{3n^2+2n} \quad \dots(3.2) \end{aligned}$$

$$\begin{aligned} [aq, q; q]_{\infty} {}_3\phi_2 \left[ \begin{matrix} a\sqrt{q}, -a\sqrt{q}, -a; q; q \\ a^2q, 0 \end{matrix} \right] \\ = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} (1 - a^2q^{4n+2}) a^{3n} q^{3n^2+n} \quad \dots(3.3) \end{aligned}$$

Transformation (3.1) is very similar to one given by Jain<sup>13</sup> [4.1].

*Proof of (3.1)*—Using  $q$ -Vandermonde's theorem the left-hand side of (3.1) becomes [Sears<sup>15</sup>, 4.2]

$$\begin{aligned} &= \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{[a; q]_n}{[q; q]_n} q^{n(n+1)/2} {}_2\phi_1 \left[ \begin{matrix} q^{-n}, q^{1-n}; q^2; q^2 \\ b^2q \end{matrix} \right] [q; q^2]_{\infty} \\ &= \sum_{r=0}^{\infty} \frac{[a; q]_r q^{2r}}{[q^2, b^2q; q]_r} {}_1\phi_1 \left[ \begin{matrix} aq^{2r}; q; -q \\ 0 \end{matrix} \right] [q; q^2]_{\infty} \end{aligned}$$

summing the inner series by the limiting case of the summation formula [Sears<sup>15</sup> (6.2)]

$${}_6W_5 \left[ a, b, c, d; q; \frac{aq}{bcd} \right] = \frac{[aq, aq/bc, aq/cd, aq/bd; q]_{\infty}}{[aq/b, aq/c, aq/d, aq/bcd; q]_{\infty}} \quad \dots(3.4)$$

(taking  $b = \sqrt{a}$ ,  $c = -\sqrt{a}$ ,  $d \rightarrow \infty$ ), we get (3.1).

*Proof of (3.2)*—In view of the transformation (3.1) (with  $a$  and  $b$  be replaced by  $aq$  and  $a\sqrt{q}$  respectively) the left hand-side of (3.2) ( $= S$ , say) becomes:

$$= [-aq, q; q]_{\infty} \frac{[aq^2; q^2]_{\infty}}{[q; q^2]_{\infty}} {}_2\phi_1 \left[ \begin{matrix} aq, 0; q^2; q^2 \\ a^2 q^2 \end{matrix} \right] \quad \dots(3.5)$$

Next using the transformation

$${}_1\phi_1 \left[ \begin{matrix} aq; q^2; aq^3 \\ a^2 q^2 \end{matrix} \right] = [q^2; q^2]_{\infty} {}_2\phi_1 \left[ \begin{matrix} aq, 0; q^2; q^2 \\ a^2 q^2 \end{matrix} \right]$$

obtained as a special case of  $q$ -Euler's transformation (Sears<sup>14</sup>, p. 176)

$${}_2\phi_1 \left[ \begin{matrix} a, b; q; \frac{ez}{ab} \\ e \end{matrix} \right] = \frac{[z; q]_{\infty}}{[ez/ab; q]_{\infty}} {}_2\phi_1 \left[ \begin{matrix} e/a, e/b; q; z \\ e \end{matrix} \right] \quad \dots(3.6)$$

(by first  $q$  replacing by  $q^2$  then replacing  $a, e, z$  by  $aq, a^2 q^2, q^2$  respectively and finally letting  $b \rightarrow \infty$ ), (3.5) gives

$$S = [-aq; q]_{\infty} [aq^2; q^2]_{\infty} {}_1\phi_1 \left[ \begin{matrix} aq; q^2; aq^3 \\ a^2 q^2 \end{matrix} \right] \quad \dots(3.7)$$

Now, transforming  ${}_1\phi_1$  of (3.7) by the special case of the Watson's  $q$ -analogue of Whipple's transformation [Bailey<sup>9</sup>, 8.5 (2)]

$${}_3W_2 \left[ a; b, c, e, f, q^{-m}; q; \frac{a^2 q^{2+m}}{bcef} \right] = \frac{[aq, aq/ef; q]_m}{[aq/e, aq/f; q]_m} \\ \times {}_4\phi_3 \left[ \begin{matrix} aq/bc, e, f, q^{-m}; q; q \\ aq/b, aq/c, efq^{-m}/a \end{matrix} \right] \quad \dots(3.8)$$

(first replace  $a$  by  $a^2 q$  then  $b = q$ ,  $e = a\sqrt{q}$ ,  $c, f, m \rightarrow \infty$  and finally replacing  $q$  by  $q^2$ ), we get (3.2).

*Proof of (3.3)*—Using (3.1) (with  $a$  and  $b$  replaced by  $-a$  and  $a\sqrt{q}$  respectively) the left-hand side of (3.3) becomes

$$\frac{[-aq; q^2]_{\infty}}{[q; q^2]_{\infty}} [aq, q; q]_{\infty} {}_2\phi_1 \left[ \begin{matrix} -a, 0; q^2; q^2 \\ a^2 q^2 \end{matrix} \right] \quad \dots(3.9)$$

Transforming the  ${}_2\phi_1$  by a special case of (3.8) (by transformation obtained by first letting  $b \rightarrow \infty$  and then replacing  $a, e$  and  $q$  by  $-a, b^2 q$  and  $q^2$  respectively), (3.9) becomes

$$[-aq; q^2]_{\infty} [aq; q]_{\infty} {}_1\phi_1 \left[ \begin{matrix} -aq^2; q^2; -aq^2 \\ a^2 q^3 \end{matrix} \right] \quad \dots(3.10)$$

Next transforming the  ${}_1\phi_1$  in (3.10) by a special case of (3.8) [by the transformation obtained from (3.8) by first letting  $c, f, m \rightarrow \infty$  then replacing  $a, e, b$  by  $a^2 q, q$  and  $b$  respectively and finally replacing  $q$  by  $q^2$ ] yields the transformation (3.3).



Now we are in a position to complete the proof of identities (1.1), (1.4) and (1.6).

*Proof of (1.1)*—In (1.2) first setting  $a = q$  and then  $x = -a$  and letting  $c, d \rightarrow \infty$ , we get

$$\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{[q; q]_{2n} q^n}{[q, -aq, -q/a; q]_n} = (1+a) \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} (-a)^n q^{n^2+n} - a \frac{[q; q]_{\infty}}{[-q/a; q]_{\infty}} {}_3\phi_2 \left[ \begin{matrix} a\sqrt{q}, -a\sqrt{q}, aq; q; q \\ a^2 q, 0 \end{matrix} \right]. \quad \dots (3.11)$$

Next, transforming the  ${}_3\phi_2$  in the right hand side of (3.11) by (3.2), we get (1.1).

*Proof of (1.4)*—If  $S$  denotes the left-hand side of (1.4) then in view of the transformation (1.3) we get (by letting  $a \rightarrow 1, b, c \rightarrow \infty$  in (1.2) and then setting  $x = a$ )

$$S = \frac{1-a}{1+a} \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} a^n q^{n^2} - \frac{[q, aq; q]_{\infty}}{[q/a, -a; q]_{\infty}} {}_3\phi_2 \left[ \begin{matrix} a\sqrt{q}, -a\sqrt{q}, -a; q; q \\ a^2 q, 0 \end{matrix} \right] \quad \dots (3.12)$$

Then the proof of (1.4) is completed by transforming the  ${}_3\phi_2$  in the right-hand side of (3.12) by (3.3).

*Proof of (1.6)*—The transformation (1.5) for  $a = q, b, c \rightarrow \infty$  and  $x = a$  yields,

$$(1+a) \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{[q; q]_{2n+1} q^{n+1}}{[q; q]_n [aq, q/a; q]_{n+1}} + \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} (1 - q^{2n+1}) a^{n+1} q^{n^2} = \frac{[q; q]_{\infty}}{[1/a; q]_{\infty}} a {}_3\phi_2 \left[ \begin{matrix} a\sqrt{q}, -a\sqrt{q}, -a; q; q \\ a^2 q, 0 \end{matrix} \right]. \quad \dots (3.13)$$

the proof of (1.6) is now readily completed by transforming the  ${}_3\phi_2$  in the right hand side of (3.13) by (3.3).

#### 4. PROOFS OF (1.9), (1.10) AND (1.11)

We began this section by proving (1.9). In view of  $q$ -analogue of Saalschütz's theorem [Sears<sup>15</sup>, (3.1)], we have

$${}_5\phi_4 \left[ \begin{matrix} a^2, b^2, c, d, e; q; q \\ ab\sqrt{q}, -ab\sqrt{q}, f, h \end{matrix} \right] = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{[a^2, b^2; q^2]_n}{[a^2 b^2; q; q]_n} \frac{[c, d, e; q]_n}{[q, f, h; q]_n}$$

(equation continued on p. 778)

$$\cdot q^{n(n-3)/2} {}_3\phi_2 \left[ \begin{matrix} q^{-n}, q^{1-n}, q^{1-2n}/a^2 b^2; q^2; q^2 \\ q^{2-2n}/a^2, q^{2-2n}/b^2 \end{matrix} \right],$$

provided  $a, b, c, d$  or  $e$  is of the form  $q^{-N}$ ,  $N$  a non-negative integer.

Writing the series definition for  ${}_3\phi_2$  on the right-hand side and diagonalizing the double sum we get

$${}_5\phi_4 \left[ \begin{matrix} a^2, b^2, c, d, e; q; q \\ ab \sqrt{q}, -ab \sqrt{q}, f, h \end{matrix} \right] = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{[a^2, b^2; q^2]_n}{[a^2 b^2 q; q^2]_n} \frac{[c, d, e; q]_n}{[q, f, h; q]_n} \\ q^{-n(n-3)/2} {}_4\phi_3 \left[ \begin{matrix} q^{-n}, cq^n, dq^n, eq^n; q; q \\ -q, fq^n, hq^n \end{matrix} \right]. \quad \dots(4.1)$$

In (4.1) setting  $c = q, d = x, e = -x, f = c, h = x^2 q/c$  we get (1.9) on summing the inner  ${}_4\phi_3$  by  $q$ -Whipple's theorem<sup>3</sup>.

$${}_4\phi_3 \left[ \begin{matrix} a, q/a, \sqrt{c}, -\sqrt{c}; q; q \\ -q, e, cq/e \end{matrix} \right] = q^{1/2n(n+1)} \frac{[ea, eq/a, caq/e, cq^2/ae; q^2]_{\infty}}{[e, cq/e; q]_{\infty}}$$

where  $a$  is of the form  $q^{-N}$ . It may be noted that number of interesting summation formulae for Saalschützian  ${}_5\phi_4$  series could be deduced from (1.9). For instance in (1.9) setting  $b^2 = cq$  and  $x = q^{-n}$ , we get

$${}_5\phi_4 \left[ \begin{matrix} a^2, cq, q, q^{-n}, -q^{-n}; q; q \\ aq \sqrt{c}, -aq \sqrt{c}, c, q^{1-2n}/c \end{matrix} \right] = \frac{(1 - cq^{2n})(1 - a^2 c)}{(1 - c)(1 - a^2 cq^{2n})}$$

whereas for  $b^2 = cq, a = q^{-n}$  it reduces to

$${}_5\phi_4 \left[ \begin{matrix} q^{-2n}, cq, q, x, -x; q; q \\ q^{1-n} \sqrt{c}, -q^{1-n} \sqrt{c}, c, x^2 q/c \end{matrix} \right] = \frac{(1 - x^2/c)(c - q^{2n})}{(1 - x^2/c q^{2n})(c - 1)}$$

and for  $c = q^2, a = q^{-n}$ , (1.9) yields

$${}_5\phi_4 \left[ \begin{matrix} q^{-2n}, b^2, q, x, -x; q; q \\ bq^{1/2-n}, -bq^{1/2-n}, q^2, \frac{x^2}{q} \end{matrix} \right] = \frac{(1 - q)(b^2 - q^{2n+1})}{(1 - q^{2n+1})(b^2 - q)}$$

which for  $q \rightarrow 1^-$  reduces to

$${}_4F_3 \left[ \begin{matrix} -2n, 2b, x, 1; \\ \frac{1}{2} + b - n, 2x - 1, 2 \end{matrix} \right] = \frac{1 - 2b + 2n}{(1 + 2n)(1 - 2b)}.$$

To complete the proofs of (1.10) and (1.11) we need the following known transformations.

$${}_{10}W_9 [a; b_1, c_1, b_2, c_2, b_3, c_3, q^{-n}; q; \frac{a^3 q^{3+n}}{b_1 b_2 b_3 c_1 c_2 c_3}] =$$

(equation continued on p. 779)

$$\frac{\left[ aq, \frac{aq}{b_3 c_3}; q \right]_n}{\left[ \frac{aq}{b_3}, \frac{aq}{c_3}; q \right]_n} \sum_{j, r \geq 0} \frac{\left[ \frac{aq}{b_1 c_1}, \frac{aq}{b_2 c_2}, b_2 c_2; q \right]_j}{[q; q]_r \left[ q, \frac{aq}{b_1}, \frac{aq}{c_1}; q \right]_j},$$

$$\times \frac{[b_3, c_3, q^{-n}, q]_{r+j} q^{r+j}}{\left[ \frac{aq}{b_2}, \frac{aq}{c_2}, b_3 c_3 q^{-n}/a; q \right]_{r+j}} \left( \frac{aq}{b_2 c_2} \right), \quad \dots(4.2)$$

$${}_{10}W_9 [a; b, x, xq, y, yq, q^{-n}, q^{1-n}; q^2; \frac{a^3 q^{3+2n}}{bx^2 y^2}]$$

$$= \frac{\left[ aq, \frac{aq}{xy}; q \right]_n}{\left[ \frac{aq}{x}, \frac{aq}{y}; q \right]_n} {}_4\phi_5 \left[ \begin{matrix} x, y, \sqrt{aq/b}, -\sqrt{(aq/b)}, q^{-n}, q; q \\ \sqrt{(aq)}, -\sqrt{(aq)}, aq/b, (xy/a) q^{-n} \end{matrix} \right]$$

$$\dots(4.3)$$

$${}_{10}W_9 [a; b, x, -x, y, -y, -q^{-n}, q^{-n}; q; -\frac{a^3 q^{3+2n}}{bx^2 y^2}]$$

$$\frac{\left[ a^2 q^2, \frac{a^2 q^2}{x^2 y^2}; q^2 \right]_n}{\left[ \frac{a^2 q^2}{x^2}, \frac{a^2 q^2}{y^2}; q^2 \right]_n} {}_5\phi_4 \left[ \begin{matrix} x^2, y^2, -aq/b, -aq^2/b, q^{-2n}; q^2; q^2 \\ -aq, -aq^2, a^2 q^2/b^2, x^2 y^2 q^{-2n}/a^2 \end{matrix} \right].$$

$$\dots(4.4)$$

In fact (4.2) is the special case  $k = 3$  of generalisation of Watson's  $q$ -analogue of Whipples transformation due to Andrews<sup>2</sup> and (4.3) and (4.4) are given in [Verma and Jain<sup>16</sup>, (1.3) and (1.4)].

*Proof of (1.10)*—The LHS of (1.10) is equal to

$$= \sum_{j=0}^{\infty} \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{[x^2; q^2]_n (-)^j q^{[n(n+1)+j(j+1)2n]/2}}{[q; q]_j [-q, x^2; q]_n}$$

$$+ \sum_{j=0}^{\infty} \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{[x^2; q^2]_n (-)^n q^{[n(n+1)+j(j+1)2n]/2}}{[q; q]_j [-q, -x^2; q]_n}$$

$$= \sum_{j=0}^{\infty} \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{[x^2; q^2]_n q^{[n(n+1)+j(j+1)2n]/2}}{[q; q]_j [-q, -x^2; q]_n} \{(-1)^j + (-)^n\}$$

$$= \sum_{j=0}^{\infty} \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{[x^2; q^2]_{n-j} q^{n(n+1)/2} \{(-)^j + (-)^{n-j}\}}{[q; q]_j [-q, -x^2; q]_{n-j}}$$

(equation continued on p. 780)



$$\begin{aligned}
&= 2 \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} q^{n(2n+1)} \sum_{j=0}^{2n} \frac{(-)^j [x^2; q^2]_{2n-j}}{[q; q]_j [-q, -x^2; q]_{2n-j}} \\
&= 2 \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{q^{n(2n+1)}}{[q; q^2]_n} \sum_{j=0}^n \frac{(-)^j [x^2; q^2]_j q^{j^2}}{[q^2, q^2]_{n-j} [-q^2, -x^2 q; q^2]_j}
\end{aligned}$$

(Using (1.9) with  $c = -q$ ,  $b \rightarrow \infty$ )

$$\begin{aligned}
&= 2 \sum_{j=0}^{\infty} \frac{[x^2; q^2]_j (-)^j q^{3j^2+j}}{[-q^2, -x^2 q; q^2]_j} \sum_{r=0}^{\infty} \frac{q^{2r^2+4rj+r}}{[q^2, q^{1+2j}; q^2]_r} \\
&= 2 \sum_{j=0}^{\infty} \frac{[x^2; q^2]_j (-)^j q^{3j^2+j}}{[-q^2, -x^2 q; q^2]_j [q^{1+2j}; q^2]_{\infty}} \\
&\quad \times \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{(-)^n q^{n^2+2nj} [q^2; q^2]_{n+j}}{[q^2; q^2]_n [q^2; q^2]_j}
\end{aligned}$$

(using last equation on page 38 of Andrews<sup>4</sup>)

$$\begin{aligned}
&= \frac{2}{[q; q^2]_{\infty}} \sum_{j=0}^{\infty} \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{[q^2; q^2]_{n+j} [x^2; q^2]_j (-)^{n+j} q^{n^2+2nj+3j^2+j}}{[q^2, -q^2, -x^2 q; q^2]_j [q^2; q^2]_n} \\
&= 2 [-q; q]_{\infty} \sum_{r=0}^{\infty} (1 - q^{4r+1}) \frac{[-q, -q^2/x^2; q^2]_r}{[-q^2, -x^2 q; q^2]_r} x^{2r} q^{4r^2}
\end{aligned}$$

(using (4.2) with first  $q \rightarrow q^2$  then  $a = q$ ,  $c_3 = q^2$ ,  $b_1 = q$ ,  $c_1 = -q^2/x^2$ ,  
 $b_2, c_2, b_3, n \rightarrow \infty$ )

which reduces to the right-hand side of (1.10) on using (4.3) (with  $a = -q$ ,  $x=q$ ,  $b = -\frac{q^2}{x^2}$ ,  $n \rightarrow \infty$  and then  $q$  replaced by  $-q$ ).

*Proof of (1.11)*—The left-hand-side of (1.11)

$$\begin{aligned}
&= \sum_{r=0}^{\infty} \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{[x^2; q^2]_{n+1} \{(-)^r - (-)^{n+1}\} q^{[r(r+1)+n(n+1)+2rn/2]}}{[-q; q]_n [-x^2 q; q]_{n+1} [q; q]_r} \\
&= \sum_{m=0}^{\infty} q^{m(m+1)/2} \sum_{r=0}^m \frac{[x^2; q^2]_{m+1-r} \{(-)^r - (-)^{m+1-r}\}}{[-q; q]_{m-r} [-x^2 q; q]_{m+1-r} [q; q]_r}
\end{aligned}$$

(equation continued on p. 781)

$$\begin{aligned}
&= 2 \sum_{m=0}^{\infty} q^{(m+1)(2m+1)} \sum_{r=0}^{2m+1} \frac{[x^2; q^2]_{2m+2-r} (-)^r}{[-q; q]_{2m+1-r} [-x^2 q; q]_{2m+2-r} [q; q]_r} \\
&= 4 \sum_{m=0}^{\infty} \frac{q^{(m+1)(2m+1)}}{[q; q^2]_{m+1}} \sum_{r=0}^m \frac{[x^2; q^2]_{r+1} (-)^{r+1} q^{(r+1)s}}{[-q, -x^2 q^2; q^2]_{r+1} [q^2; q^2]_{m-r}}
\end{aligned}$$

(using (1.9) with  $a = q^{-2m-2}$ ,  $c = -1$ ,  $b \rightarrow \infty$ )

$$\begin{aligned}
&= 4 \sum_{r=0}^{\infty} \sum_{s=0}^{\infty} \frac{[x^2; q^2]_{r+1} (-)^{r+1} q^{3r^2+2s^2+4rs+5r+3s+2}}{[q^2; q^2]_s [-q, -x^2 q^2; q^2]_{r+1} [q; q^2]_{r+s+1}} \\
&= 4 \sum_{r=0}^{\infty} \frac{[x^2; q^2]_{r+1} (-)^{r+1} q^{3r^2+5r+2}}{[q, -x^2 q^2, -q; q^2]_{r+1}} \sum_{s=0}^{\infty} \frac{q^{2s^2+4rs+3s}}{[q^2, q^{3+2r}; q^2]_s} \\
&= 4 \sum_{r=0}^{\infty} \frac{[x^2; q^2]_{r+1} (-)^{r+1} q^{3r^2+5r+2}}{[-x^2 q^2, q, -q; q^2]_{r+1} [q^{3+2r}; q^2]_{\infty}} \\
&\quad \cdot \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{[q^{2+2r}; q^2]_n (-)^n q^{n^2+2nr+2n}}{[q^2; q^2]_n} \\
&= \frac{4}{[q; q^2]_{\infty}} \sum_{r=0}^{\infty} \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{[x^2; q^2]_{r+1} [q^2; q^2]_{n+r} (-)^{n+r+1} q^{n^2+3r+2nr+5r+2n+2}}{[q^2; q^2]_r [q^2; q^2]_n [-x^2 q^2, -q; q^2]_{r+1}} \\
&= 4 [-q; q]_{\infty} \frac{(q^5 - q^2)(1 - x^2)}{(1 + q)(1 + x^2 q^2)}
\end{aligned}$$

$$\lim_{b_2, c_2, b_3, n \rightarrow \infty} {}_{10}W_9 [q^3; -q^2, -\frac{q}{x^2}, b_2, c_2, b_3, q^2, q^{-2n}; q^2;$$

$$\left. \frac{x^2 q^{10+2n}}{b_2 c_2 b_3} \right]$$

(using (4.2))

$$\begin{aligned}
&= [-q; q]_{\infty} \frac{(q^5 - q^2)(1 - x^2)}{(1 + q)(1 + x^2 q^2)(1 - q^6)} \\
&\quad \cdot \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{[x^2 q^4; q^2]_{2n} (-)^n q^{2n^2+4n}}{[-q^6; q^2]_{2n} [x^4 q^8; q^4]_n}.
\end{aligned}$$

Lastly using (4.4) with  $q \rightarrow q^2$  and then  $a = q^3$ ,  $x = q^2$ ,  $b = -\frac{q}{x^2} y$ ,  $n \rightarrow \infty$  the above expression reduces to the RHS of (1.11).

## 5. TWO INTERESTING QUADRATIC TRANSFORMATIONS

In this section we prove the following quadratic transformations

$$\begin{aligned} & {}_6\phi_5 \left[ \begin{matrix} a^2, -aq, x, y, ac^2q^{1+m}/xy, q^{-m}; q; q \\ -a, acq/x, acq/y, xyq^{-m}/c, acq^{1+m} \end{matrix} \right] \\ &= \frac{[cq/x, cq/y, acq, acq/xy; q]_m}{[cq, acq/x, acq/y, cq/xy; q]_m} \\ &\quad \times {}_{12}W_{11} [c; a, x, y, \sqrt{(c/a)}, -\sqrt{(c/a)}, \sqrt{cq/a}, -\sqrt{(cq/a)} \\ &\quad, \frac{ac^2q^{1+m}}{xy}, q^{-m}, q; q^2] \end{aligned} \quad \dots(5.1)$$

$$\begin{aligned} & {}_{12}W_{11} [-a; b, q\sqrt{a}, -q\sqrt{a}, x, -x, y, -y, z, -z; q; a^3q^2/bx^2y^2z^2] \\ &= \frac{\left[ a^2q^2, \frac{a^2q^2}{x^2y^2}, \frac{a^2q^2}{x^2z^2}, \frac{a^2q^2}{y^2z^2}; q^2 \right]_\infty}{\left[ \frac{a^2q^2}{x^2}, \frac{a^2q^2}{y^2}, \frac{a^2q^2}{z^2}, \frac{a^2q^3}{x^2y^2z^2}; q^2 \right]_\infty} \\ &\quad \cdot {}_5\phi_4 \left[ \begin{matrix} x^2, y^2, z^2, a/b, aq/b; q^2; q^2 \\ a, aq, a^2q^2/b^2, x^2y^2z^2/a^2 \end{matrix} \right] \\ &\quad + \frac{[a^2q^2, x^2, y^2, z^2, a^2q^4/b^2x^2y^2z^2, a^4q^4/x^2y^2z^2; q^2]_\infty}{\left[ \frac{a^2q^2}{x^2}, \frac{a^2q^2}{y^2}, \frac{a^2q^2}{z^2}, \frac{a^2q^2}{b^2}, \frac{x^2y^2z^2}{a^2q^2}, \frac{a^2q^4}{x^2y^2z^2}; q^2 \right]_\infty} \\ &\quad \times \frac{\left[ \frac{a}{b}, \frac{a^3q^2}{x^2y^2z^2}; q \right]_\infty}{\left[ a, \frac{a^3q^2}{bx^2y^2z^2}; q \right]_\infty} \\ &\quad \cdot {}_5\phi_4 \left[ \begin{matrix} \frac{a^2q^2}{x^2y^2}, \frac{a^2q^2}{x^2z^2}, \frac{a^2q^2}{y^2z^2}, \frac{a^3q^2}{bx^2y^2z^2}, \frac{a^3q^3}{bx^2y^2z^2}; q^2; q^2 \\ \frac{a^4q^4}{x^2y^2z^2}, \frac{a^2q^4}{b^2x^2y^2z^2}, \frac{a^3q^2}{x^2y^2z^2}, \frac{a^3q^3}{x^2y^2z^2} \end{matrix} \right]. \end{aligned} \quad \dots(5.2)$$

The transformation (5.1) is a  $q$ -analogue of the following interesting transformation of 'half-poised' hypergeometric series [see Whipple<sup>17</sup>, p. 70] for definition of 'half-poised' series)

$${}_5F_4 \left[ \begin{matrix} 2a, 1+a, x, y, -m; \\ a, 1+a+c-x, 1+a+c-y, 1+a+c+m \end{matrix} \right] =$$

(equation continued on p. 783)



$$= \frac{(1+a+c)_m (1+a+c-x-y)_m}{(1+a+c-x)_m (1+a+c-y)_m} {}_5F_4 \left[ \begin{matrix} x, y, (c-a)/2, (1+c-a)/2, -m; \\ (1+c-a, x+y-a-c-m, (2+c+a)/2, (1+c+a)/2 \end{matrix} \right].$$

*Proof of (5.1)*—Specializing the parameters in the transformation [Sears<sup>14</sup>, (8.3)], we get

$${}_4\phi_3 \left[ \begin{matrix} a^2 - aq, c, q^{-n}; q; q, \\ -a, aq^{1-n}, acq \end{matrix} \right] = [a, c/a, aq/c; q]_n / acq, [a/c; q]_n.$$

Now replacing  $c$  by  $cq^n$ , multiplying both sides by

$$\frac{[1/a, c, x, y, ac^2 q^{1+m}/xy, q^{-m}; q]_n (1 - cq^{2n}) q^n}{[q, acq, cq/x, cq/y, xyq^{-m}/ac, cq^{1+m}; q]_n (1 - c)}$$

and summing with respect to  $n$  from  $n = 0$  to  $m$ , we get (5.1) on interchanging the order of summations on the left hand side and summing the inner  ${}_8W_7$  by [Bailey<sup>9</sup>; 8.3 (1)].

*Proof of (6.2)*—In the non-terminating version of Saalschütz' summation formula [Sears<sup>15</sup>, (5.1)];

$$\begin{aligned} & \frac{[aq, aq/fq, ag/fh, aq/gh; q]_\infty}{[f, g, h, aq/fqh; q]_\infty} {}_3\phi_2 \left[ \begin{matrix} f, g, h; q; q \\ aq, fgh/a \end{matrix} \right] \\ & + \frac{[a^2 q^2/fqh; q]_\infty}{[fgh/aq; q]_\infty} {}_3\phi_2 \left[ \begin{matrix} aq/gh, aq/fh, aq/fq; q; q \\ aq^2/fqh, a^2 q^2/fqh \end{matrix} \right] \\ & = \frac{[aq/f, aq/g, aq/h; q]_\infty}{[f, g, h; q]_\infty}. \end{aligned} \quad \dots(5.3)$$

First replacing  $q$  by  $q^2$  and then  $a, f, g, h$  by  $a^2 q^{4r}, x^2 q^{2r}, y^2 q^{2r}, z^2 q^{2r}$  respectively and multiplying by

$$\frac{[-a, b; q]_r (1 - a^2 q^{4r})}{[q, -aq/b; q]_r (1 - a^2)} (-a^3 q^2/bx^2 y^2 z^2)^r$$

and summing with respect to  $r$  from 0 to  $\infty$ , we get

$$\begin{aligned} & \frac{\left[ \frac{a^2 q^2}{x^2}, \frac{a^2 q^2}{y^2}, \frac{a^2 q^2}{z^2}; q^2 \right]_\infty} {[x^2, y^2, z^2; q^2]_\infty} {}_{13}W_{11} \left[ \begin{matrix} -a; b, q\sqrt{a}, -q\sqrt{a}, x, \\ -x, y, -y, z, -z; q; \frac{a^3 q^2}{bx^2 y^2 z^2} \end{matrix} \right] \\ & = \frac{[a^2 q^2, a^2 q^2/x^2 y^2, a^2 q^2/x^2 z^2, a^2 q^2/y^2 z^2, q^2]_\infty}{[x^2, y^2, z^2, a^2 q^2/x^2 y^2 z^2; q^2]_\infty} \end{aligned}$$

(equation continued on p. 784)

$$\begin{aligned}
& \times \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{[x^2, y^2, z^2; q^2]_n q^{2n}}{[q^2, a^2 q^2, x^2 y^2 z^2/a^2; q^2]_n} \\
& \times {}_8W_7 [-a; b, q\sqrt{a}, -q\sqrt{a}, -q^{-n}, q^{-n}; q; aq^{2n}/b] \\
& + \frac{[a^4 q^4/x^2 y^2 z^2; q^2]_{\infty}}{[x^2 y^2 z^2/a^2 q^2; q^2]_{\infty}} \\
& \times \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{[a^2 q^2/x^2 y^2, a^2 q^2/x^2 z^2, a^2 q^2/y^2 z^2; q^2]_n q^{2n}}{[q^2, a^2 q^4/x^2 y^2 z^2, a^4 q^4/x^2 y^2 z^2; q^2]_n} \\
& \times {}_8W_7 [-a, b, q\sqrt{a}, -q\sqrt{a}, \frac{x y z q^{-n-1}}{a}, \\
& \quad , \frac{-x y z q^{-n-1}}{a}; q; \frac{a^2 q^{2+2n}}{bx^2 y^2 z^2}]. \quad \dots(5.4)
\end{aligned}$$

Using the summation

$$\begin{aligned}
& {}_8W_7 [-a; b; -q\sqrt{a}, q\sqrt{a}, -z, z; q; a/bz^2] \\
& = \frac{[a^2 q^2, a^2 q^2/b^2 z^2; q^2]_{\infty} [a/b, a/z^2; q]_{\infty}}{[a^2 q^2/b^2, a^2 q^2/z^2; q^2]_{\infty} [a, a/bz^2; q]_{\infty}} \quad \dots(5.5)
\end{aligned}$$

to sum both the  ${}_8W_7$  in (5.4) we get (5.2). The proof of (5.5) is completed by first replacing  $a$  by  $-a$  in the transformation Verma and Jain<sup>16</sup> (5.1) and then setting  $x^2 = aq$ ,  $y^2 = aq^2$  and using (5.3) to evaluate the right hand side.

#### REFERENCES

1. R. P. Agarwal, *Advan. in Math.* 53 (1984), 291-300.
2. G. E. Andrews, Problems and prospects for basic hypergeometric functions in 'Theory and Applications of Special Functions'. (Ed.: R. Askey, Academic Press, New York, 1975).
3. G. E. Andrews, *SIAM J. Math. Anal.* 7 (1976), 332-36.
4. G. E. Andrews, *The Theory of Partitions, Encyclopedia of Mathematics and its Applications*, Vol. 2, (Ed.: G. C. Rota). Addison-Wesley, Reading, Mass 1976.
5. G. E. Andrews, *Amer. Math. Monthly* 86 (1979), 89-108.
6. G. E. Andrews, *Advan. in Math.* 41 (1981), 137-72.
7. G. E. Andrews, *Advan. in Math.* 53 (1984), 55-74.
8. R. Askey, and J. Wilson, *Mem. Am. Math. Soc.* 325 (1985).
9. W. N. Bailey, *Generalized Hypergeometric Series*. Cambridge Tract, 1935.
10. W. N. Bailey, *J. London Math. Soc.* 22 (1947), 237-40.
11. L. Carlitz, *Monatsch. fur Math.* 73 (1969), 193-198.
12. G. Gasper, and M. Rahman, *SIAM J. Math. Anal.* 17 (1986), 970-99.

13. V. K. Jain, *SIAM J. Math. Anal.* **12** (1981), 957-61.
14. D. B. Sears, *Proc. London Math. Soc.* (2) **53** (1951), 158-80.
15. D. B. Sears, *Proc. London Math. Soc.* (2) **52**, (1951), 467-83.
16. A. Verma, and V. K. Jain, *J. Math. Anal. Appl.* **87** (1982), 9-44.
17. F. J. W. Whipple, *Proc. London. Math. Soc.* **26** (1927), 257-72.



## UNSTEADY LAMINAR BOUNDARY LAYER FORCED FLOW OVER A MOVING WALL WITH A MAGNETIC FIELD

C. D. SURMA DEVI

*Department of Mathematics, Bangalore Institute of Technology, Bangalore 560004*

H. S. TAKHAR

*Department of Engineering, Simon Engineering Laboratories, University of Manchester, Oxford Road, Manchester, M13 9PL, England*

G. NATH

*Department of Applied Mathematics, Indian Institute of Science, Bangalore 560012*

*(Received 17 March 1987; after revision 15 February 1988)*

The unsteady laminar incompressible two-dimensional and axisymmetric stagnation-point flows over a moving wall with a magnetic field have been studied when the free stream velocity and the wall velocity vary arbitrarily with time. It has been shown that self-similar solution is possible when the free stream velocity, the wall velocity and square of the magnetic field vary inversely as a linear function of time. The partial differential equations governing the semi-similar case and the ordinary differential equations governing the self-similar case have been solved numerically using the finite-difference scheme in combination with the quasilinearization technique. Analytical solutions have also been obtained for certain limiting cases. The skin friction and heat transfer are appreciably affected by the free stream velocity distribution, magnetic field and wall velocity. However, their effects on the heat transfer is comparatively less compared to the skin friction.

### 1. INTRODUCTION

Flows over moving walls are of interest in a number of technical applications, especially in metallurgy and chemical processes industries. Such flows belong to a separate class of problems of boundary layer theory which is distinct from those over stationary bodies. Sakiadis<sup>1</sup> was probably the first to study the flow over a moving boundary in a fluid at rest. Subsequently, several investigators<sup>2-8</sup> considered the behaviour of boundary layer on moving surfaces under different situations. All these studies pertain to steady flows. The unsteady flow over a moving wall with forced flow has not been studied so far. However, the unsteady forced flow over a stationary wall has been studied by Yang<sup>9</sup> when the free stream velocity varies inversely as a linear function of time. Also, the unsteady flow over a moving wall in a fluid at rest has been studied recently by Surma Devi and Nath<sup>10</sup>.

The aim of the present analysis is to study the unsteady laminar incompressible forced flow over a moving boundary with an applied magnetic field when the free stream velocity and the wall velocity vary arbitrarily with time. It has also been shown that the self-similar solution is possible when the free stream velocity, wall velocity and the square of the magnetic field vary inversely as a linear function of time. It may be noted that here the wall is not moving as a rigid boundary as considered by Sakiadis<sup>1</sup>, but it is stretched. The partial differential equations governing the semi-similar case and the ordinary differential equations governing the self-similar case have been solved numerically using a finite-difference scheme in combination with the quasilinearization technique<sup>11,12</sup>. Also analytical solutions of certain limiting cases have been obtained. The results have been compared with those available in the literature.

## 2. GOVERNING EQUATIONS

We consider that a two-dimensional or an axisymmetric body is moving with time-dependent velocity  $u_w$  in a laminar incompressible fluid with free stream velocity  $u_e$  which also varies with time (see inset of Fig. 1). The fluid is assumed to be electrically conducting and a magnetic field  $B$  fixed relative to the fluid is applied in the dire-

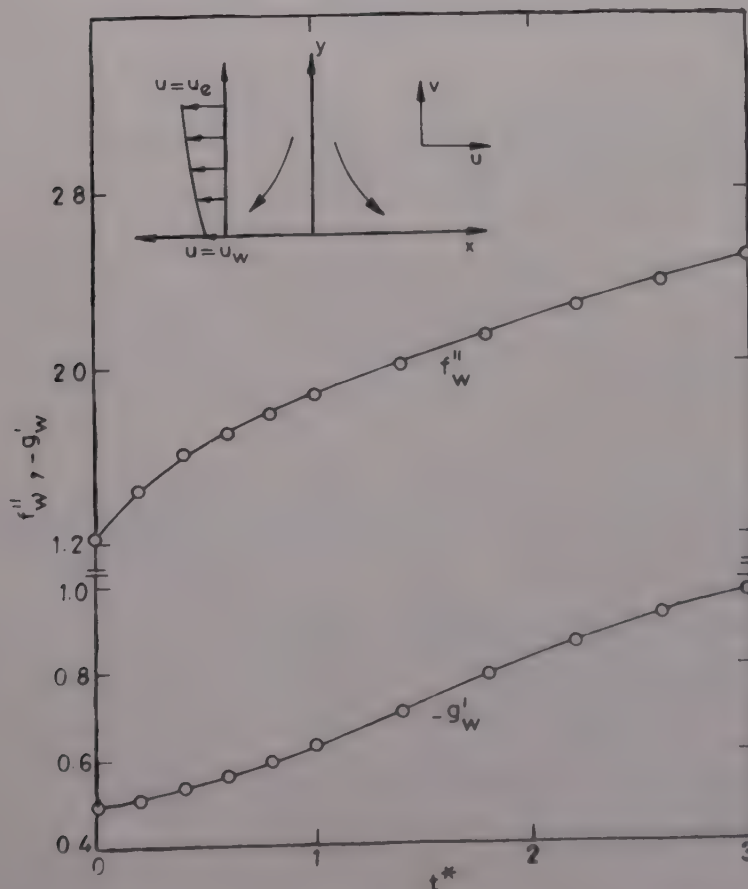


FIG. 1. Comparison of skin-friction and heat-transfer results  $(f''_w, -g'_w)$  for  $\phi(t^*) = 1 + t^*$ ,  $M = b = j = 0$ ,  $Pr = 0.72$ , \_\_\_\_\_, Present results; 0, Kumari and Nath.

ction perpendicular to the body. The magnetic Reynolds number is assumed to be small, hence the induced magnetic field will be small compared to the applied magnetic field and can be neglected. Since we are interested in the stagnation point region, the viscous dissipation and Joule heating terms are neglected as they are small in the neighbourhood of the stagnation point. The Hall effect is also neglected. The wall and free stream temperatures are taken to be constants. By assuming that Prandtl's boundary layer assumptions are valid in the present case, the governing equations can be expressed as

$$(r'u)_x + (r'v)_y = 0 \quad \dots(1a)$$

$$u_t + uu_x + vv_y = (u_e)_t + u_e (u_e)_x + \nu u_{yy} + (\sigma B^2 u_e / \rho) (1 - u/u_e) \quad \dots(1b)$$

$$T_t + uT_x + vT_y = Pr^{-1} \nu T_{yy}. \quad \dots(1c)$$

The initial and boundary conditions are given by

$$u(x, y, 0) = u_t(x, y), v(x, y, 0) = v_t(x, y), T(x, y, 0) = T_t(x, y) \quad \dots(2a)$$

$$\left. \begin{aligned} u(x, 0, t) &= u_w(x, t), v(x, 0, t) = 0, T(x, 0, t) = T_w, \\ u(x, \infty, t) &= u_e(x, t), T(x, \infty, t) = T_\infty. \end{aligned} \right\} \quad \dots(2b)$$

### 2.1 Semi-similar Equations

In order to reduce the number of independent variables from 3 to 2 in eqns. (1a) to (1c), we apply the following transformations

$$\left. \begin{aligned} \eta &= (1+j)^{1/2} (a/\nu)^{1/2} y, u = ax \varphi(t^*) f'(\eta, t^*), t^* = at, \\ v &= -(1+j)^{1/2} (a\nu)^{1/2} \varphi(t^*) f(\eta, t^*), u_w = a_1 x \varphi(t^*) \end{aligned} \right\} \quad \dots(3a)$$

$$\left. \begin{aligned} u_e &= ax \varphi(t^*), (T - T_\infty)/(T_w - T_\infty) = g(\eta, t^*), r \approx x, M = Ha^2/Re_L \\ Ha^2 &= \sigma B^2 L^2 / \mu, Re_L = aL^2/\nu, b = u_w/u_e \end{aligned} \right\} \quad \dots(3b)$$

to eqns. (1a) to (1c), we find that eqn. (1a) is satisfied identically and eqns. (1b) to (1c) reduce to

$$\begin{aligned} f'''' + \varphi f f'' + (1+j)^{-1} [\varphi(1-f'^2) + \varphi^{-1} \varphi_{t^*} (1-f') - f'_{t^*} \\ + M(1-f')] = 0. \end{aligned} \quad \dots(4)$$

$$Pr^{-1} g'' + \varphi f g' - (1+j)^{-1} g_{t^*} = 0. \quad \dots(5)$$

The boundary conditions are given by

$$\left. \begin{aligned} f = 0, f' = b, g = 1 \text{ at } \eta = 0, \\ f' \rightarrow 1, g \rightarrow 0 \text{ as } \eta \rightarrow \infty \end{aligned} \right\} \text{ for } t^* \geq 0. \quad \dots(6)$$



The flow is initially assumed to be steady ( $t^* = 0$ ) and then changes to unsteady state ( $t^* > 0$ ). Therefore, the initial conditions are given by the steady-state equations obtained by putting

$$t^* = 0, \varphi = 1, f'_{i*} = g_{i*} = \varphi_{i*} = 0 \quad \dots(7)$$

in eqns. (4) and (5) and the steady-state equations are

$$f'' + ff'' + (1+j)^{-1}(1-f'^2) + M(1-f') = 0 \quad \dots(8)$$

$$Pr^{-1}g'' + fg' = 0. \quad \dots(9)$$

It may be noted that eqns. (4) and (5) contain two independent variables and are known as semi-similar equations.

Here  $x$  and  $y$  are distances along and perpendicular to the surface, respectively;  $u$  and  $v$  are the components of velocity along  $x$  and  $y$  directions, respectively;  $t$  and  $t^*$  are the dimensional and dimensionless times, respectively;  $T$  is the temperature;  $\mu$  and  $\nu$  are the coefficient of viscosity and kinematic viscosity, respectively;  $\eta$  is the similarity variable;  $f$  is the dimensionless stream function;  $f'$ ,  $g$  are the dimensionless velocity and temperature, respectively;  $B$  is the magnetic field;  $a$  is the velocity gradient at  $t^* = 0$ ,  $r$  is the radius of the axisymmetric body;  $j = 0$  and  $1$  for two-dimensional and axisymmetric flows, respectively;  $M$ ,  $Ha$  and  $Re_L$  are the magnetic parameter, Hartmann number and Reynolds number, respectively;  $a_1$  is the gradient of the wall velocity at  $t^* = 0$ ;  $b$  is the ratio of the velocity of the wall and the free stream velocity ( $b \geq 0$  according to whether the velocities of the wall and free stream are in the same direction or in opposite direction);  $\sigma$ ,  $Pr$  and  $L$  are respectively, electrical conductivity, Prandtl number and characteristic length.  $\varphi$  is an arbitrary function of  $t^*$  having continuous first derivative for  $t^* \geq 0$ . The subscript  $i$  denotes the initial conditions; the subscripts  $e$ ,  $w$ , and  $\infty$  denote conditions at the edge of the boundary layer, on the wall and in the free stream, respectively; the subscripts  $t$ ,  $t^*$ ,  $x$  and  $y$ , denote partial derivatives with respect to  $t$ ,  $t^*$ ,  $x$  and  $y$ , respectively; and prime denotes derivatives with respect to  $\eta$ .

It may be noted that eqns. (4) and (5) for  $b = M = 0$  and  $j = 0$  and  $1$  reduce to eqns. (3a) and (3c) of Kumari and Nath<sup>13</sup> with  $c = 0$  and  $1$  ( $c = 0$  for a two-dimensional flow and  $c = 1$  for an axisymmetric flow). Our eqns. (4) and (5) for  $j = 0$  (two-dimensional flow) are identical to eqns. (3a) and (3c) of Kumari and Nath<sup>13</sup> with  $c = 0$ . However, our eqns. (4) and (5) for  $j = 1$  (axisymmetric flow) differ from eqns. (3a) and (3c) of Kumari and Nath<sup>13</sup> with  $c = 1$  by a scaling factor.

The skin friction and heat transfer coefficients can be expressed as

$$\left. \begin{aligned} C_f &= 2\tau_w/[\rho(u_e^2)_{t^*=0}] = 2(Re_x)^{-1/2}\varphi(t^*)f'_w, \\ Nu &= x(\partial T/\partial y)_w/(T_w - T_\infty) = -(Re_x)^{1/2}g'_w \end{aligned} \right\} \quad \dots(10a)$$

where

$$\tau_w = \mu (\partial u / \partial y)_w, \text{Re}_x = ax^2/\nu, (u_e)_{t^*=0} = ax. \quad \dots(10b)$$

Here  $C_f$  and  $Nu$  are the surface skin friction coefficient and Nusselt number (heat transfer coefficients), respectively;  $\tau_w$  is the shear stress at the wall;  $f_w''$  and  $-g_w'$  are the skin friction and heat transfer parameters at the wall;  $\text{Re}_x$  is the local Reynolds number; and  $\rho$  is the density.

## 2.2. Self-similar Equations

The set of eqns. (1a) to (1c) is partial differential equations with three independent variables. It can be shown that if the free stream velocity and the wall velocity vary inversely as a linear function of time and directly as a linear function of  $x$  (i. e.  $u_e = ax(1 - \lambda t^*)^{-1}$ ,  $u_w = a_1 x(1 - \lambda t^*)^{-1}$ ), and the magnetic field as a square root of the linear function of time then eqns. (1a) to (1c) admit self-similar solutions i. e. they are reduced to a set of ordinary differential equations. We apply the following transformations

$$\left. \begin{aligned} \eta &= (1+j)^{1/2} (a/\nu)^{1/2} (1 - \lambda t^*)^{-1/2} y, t^* = at, \lambda t^* < 1, \\ u &= ax(1 - \lambda t^*)^{-1} f'(\eta), v = -(1+j)^{1/2} (1 - \lambda t^*)^{-1/2} f(\eta), \\ (T - T_\infty)/(T_w - T_\infty) &= g(\eta), B = B_0(1 - \lambda t^*)^{-1/2}, M = Ha^2/\text{Re}_L, \\ Ha^2 &= \sigma B_0^2 L^2/\mu, u_e = ax(1 - \lambda t^*)^{-1}, u_w = a_1 x(1 - \lambda t^*)^{-1}. \end{aligned} \right\} \quad \dots(11)$$

to eqns. (1a) to (1c) and we find that eqn. (1a) is satisfied identically and eqns. (1b) to (1c) reduce to

$$f'''' + ff'' + (1+j)^{-1} [(1 - f'^2) + \lambda(1 - f' - \eta f''/2) + M(1 - f')] = 0. \quad \dots(12)$$

$$Pr^{-1} g'' + fg' - (1+j)^{-1} \lambda \eta g'/2 = 0. \quad \dots(13)$$

The boundary conditions are

$$f = 0, f' = b, g = 1 \text{ at } \eta = 0; f' - 1 = g = 0 \text{ as } \eta \rightarrow \infty. \quad \dots(14)$$

Here  $\lambda$  is the parameter characterizing the unsteadiness in the flow field and  $B_0$  is the value of the magnetic field  $B$  at  $t^* = 0$ .  $\lambda > < 0$  according as the flow is accelerating or decelerating. Also the magnetic field  $B$  is assumed to vary as the square root of a linear function of time as given in (11) in order to obtain self-similar solution. In actual practice, it may not be possible to create and maintain such a magnetic field. In spite of this weakness, the results may be used to gain some insight into the characteristics of flow based on more realistic distribution of the magnetic field.



It may be noted that the governing self-similar equations (12) and (13) with boundary conditions (14) reduce to those of Yang<sup>9</sup> for  $M = b = j = 0$ . The self-similar solution implies that the solution at one value of time  $t$  is similar to the solution at any other value of time  $t$ . The advantage of the similarity solution is that the partial differential equations reduce to ordinary differential which is a great mathematical simplification. However, there are certain limitations to such solutions. The partial differential equations do not impart their parabolic nature to the ordinary differential equations on whose solution it is not possible to impose an arbitrary condition at an initial time  $t = t_0$ , because the solutions at all values of time  $t$  become equivalent. Therefore, the self-similar solution can be considered as asymptotic and will be correct in some limit  $t \rightarrow t_1$ .

The skin-friction and heat-transfer coefficients are given by

$$\left. \begin{aligned} C_f &= 2 \tau_w / (\rho u_e^2) = 2 (1 + j)^{1/2} (\overline{\text{Re}_x})^{-1/2} f_w'', \quad \overline{\text{Re}_x} = u_e x / \nu \\ Nu &= x T_y / (T_w - T_\infty) = (1 + j)^{1/2} (\overline{\text{Re}_x})^{1/2} g_n' \end{aligned} \right\} \quad \dots(15)$$

### 3. SOLUTION OF GOVERNING EQUATIONS

#### 3.1. Asymptotic Solution

In this section, we consider the asymptotic behaviour of the governing equations (12) and (13) (i. e. the behaviour of the equations when  $\eta$  becomes large). This will enable us to find the range of values of  $\lambda$  for which similarity solution is valid. For large  $\eta$  following the analysis of Watson and Wang<sup>15</sup>, we set

$$f(\eta) = \eta + f_1(\eta), \quad g(\eta) = g_1(\eta). \quad \dots(16a)$$

From boundary conditions (14), it is evident that

$$f_1 \rightarrow 0, \quad f_1' \rightarrow 0, \quad g_1 \rightarrow 0 \quad \text{as } \eta \rightarrow \infty \quad \dots(16b)$$

where  $f_1$  and  $g_1$  are small. Now linearizing equations (12) and (13) using relations given in eqn. (16a) and integrating the resulting equation corresponding to eqn. (12) once and using the appropriate boundary conditions, we get

$$f_1'' + \alpha \eta f_1' - [(1 + j)^{-1} (2 + \lambda + M) + \alpha] f_1 = 0 \quad \dots(17a)$$

$$Pr^{-1} g_1'' + \alpha \eta g_1' = 0, \quad \alpha = 1 - 2^{-1} (1 + j)^{-1} \lambda. \quad \dots(17b)$$

The solution of eqn. (17b) satisfying the relevant boundary condition given in (16b) can be written in the form

$$g = g_1 = -A \int_{\eta}^{\infty} \exp(-Pr \alpha \eta^2/2) d\eta \quad \dots(18)$$



where  $A$  is a constant. We apply the following transformation to equation (17a)

$$f_1 = \exp(-\alpha \eta^3/4) H. \quad \dots(19)$$

Consequently, equation (17a) can be reduced to

$$H'' - [3/2 + (1+j)^{-1}(2 + \lambda/4 + M) + \alpha^2 \eta^2/4] H = 0 \quad \dots(20)$$

where  $H \rightarrow 0$  as  $\eta \rightarrow \infty$ . Equation (20) is Weber's type of equation whose solution for large  $\eta$  can be written in terms of parabolic cylinder functions as<sup>14</sup>

$$H = A_1 \exp(-\alpha^2 \eta^2/4) (\alpha \eta)^n P_1(\eta) + B_1 \exp(\alpha^2 \eta^2/4) (\alpha \eta)^{-n-1} P_2(\eta) \quad \dots(21)$$

where

$$\left. \begin{aligned} P_1(\eta) &= [1 - 2^{-1} n(n-1) (\alpha \eta)^{-2} + O(\alpha \eta)^{-4} - \dots], \\ P_2(\eta) &= [1 + 2^{-1} n(n+1) (\alpha \eta)^{-2} + O(\alpha \eta)^{-4} + \dots], \\ n &= -2 - (1+j)^{-1}(2 + \lambda/4 + M). \end{aligned} \right\} \quad \dots(22)$$

Since  $H$  tends to zero as  $\eta \rightarrow \infty$ , the divergent part of the solution of  $H$  i. e.  $\exp(\alpha^2 \eta^2/4)$  will be omitted. Hence from equations (19) and (21) we find that

$$f_1 = A_1 \exp[-\alpha(\alpha+1)\eta^2/4] (\alpha \eta)^n P_1(\eta). \quad \dots(23)$$

It is clear from eqns. (18) and (23) that both  $g$  or  $g_1$  and  $f_1$  decay to zero exponentially if  $\alpha > 0$  i. e.  $\lambda < 2(1+j)$ . This fixes the upper limit of  $\lambda$ . The lower limit of  $\lambda$  is given by that value of  $\lambda$  ( $\lambda < 0$ ) for which the skin friction parameter  $f_w''$  vanishes.

### 3.2. Analytical Solution

It may be remarked that it is not possible to obtain closed form solutions of eqns. (12) and (13) under conditions (14). However if  $b = 1$ , closed form solutions of eqns. (12) and (13) satisfying conditions (14) can be obtained and they are expressed as

$$\begin{aligned} f &= \eta \\ g &= 1 - 2(\alpha_1/\pi)^{1/2} \int_0^\eta \exp(-\alpha_1 \eta^2) d\eta \end{aligned} \quad \dots(24b)$$

$$\alpha_1 = (Pr/2) [1 - 2^{-1}(1+j)^{-1}\lambda]. \quad \dots(24c)$$

Since we are interested in the closed form solution of eqn. (12) in the neighbourhood of  $b = 1$ , we perturb  $f$  as

$$f = \eta + \epsilon f_2(\eta) + O(\epsilon^2), \quad \epsilon = 1 - b \quad \dots(25)$$

Linearizing eqn. (12) with the help of (25), we get

$$f_2'' + \alpha \eta f_2' - (1+j)^{-1}(2 + \lambda + M) f_2' = 0. \quad \dots(26)$$

The appropriate boundary conditions are

$$f_2(0) = 0, f_2'(0) = -1, f_2'(\infty) = 0. \quad \dots(27)$$

We apply the following transformation

$$f_2'(\eta) = \exp(-\alpha\eta^2/4) F(\eta) \quad \dots(28)$$

to eqn. (26) which then reduces to

$$F'' - [(\alpha/2) + (1+j)^{-1}(2+\lambda+M) + \alpha^2\eta^2/4] F = 0. \quad \dots(29)$$

The relevant boundary conditions are

$$F(0) = -1, F(\infty) = 0. \quad \dots(30)$$

It may be noted that eqn. (29) is Weber's type of equation and its solution under condition (30) can be expressed as

$$F = -\exp(-\alpha^2\eta^2/4) [{}_1F_1\left(-\frac{a}{2}, \frac{1}{2}, \frac{\alpha^2\eta^2}{2}\right) + (B_2/A_2) \alpha\eta {}_1F_1\left(\frac{1-a}{2}, \frac{3}{2}, \frac{\alpha^2\eta^2}{2}\right)]. \quad \dots(31)$$

From eqns. (28) and (31), we get

$$f_2' = -\exp[-\alpha(\alpha+1)\eta^2/4] [{}_1F_1\left(-\frac{a}{2}, \frac{1}{2}, \frac{\alpha^2\eta^2}{2}\right) + (B_2/A_2) \alpha\eta {}_1F_1\left(\frac{1-a}{2}, \frac{3}{2}, \frac{\alpha^2\eta^2}{2}\right)] \quad \dots(32)$$

where

$$\begin{aligned} {}_1F_1\left(-\frac{a}{2}, \frac{1}{2}, \frac{\alpha^2\eta^2}{2}\right) &= \left[1 - \frac{a}{2} \frac{\alpha^2\eta^2}{2} + \frac{\frac{a}{2}\left(\frac{a}{2}-1\right)}{3L2} \right. \\ &\quad \left. \times \left(\frac{\alpha^2\eta^2}{2}\right)^2 - \dots \right] \\ {}_1F_1\left(\frac{1-a}{2}, \frac{3}{2}, \frac{\alpha^2\eta^2}{2}\right) &= \left[1 + \frac{1-a}{3} \frac{\alpha^2\eta^2}{2} \right. \\ &\quad \left. + \frac{(1-a)(3-a)}{3 \cdot 5 \cdot 2^3} (\alpha^2\eta^2)^2 + \dots \right] \end{aligned} \quad \dots(33a)$$

$$\left. \begin{aligned}
 a &= -(\alpha + 1)/2 - (1 + j)^{-1} (2 + \lambda + M), \quad \alpha = [1 - 2^{-1} \\
 &\quad (1 + j)^{-1} \lambda], \\
 A_2 &= \Gamma(1/2)/\Gamma\left(\frac{1-a}{2}\right), \quad B_2 = 2^{-1/2} \Gamma(-1/2)/ \\
 &\quad \Gamma(-a/2).
 \end{aligned} \right\} \dots(33b)$$

The shear stress at the wall is given by

$$f_2''(0) = \frac{2^{1/2} \alpha \Gamma\{\frac{1}{4}(\alpha + 3) + \frac{1}{2}(1 + j)^{-1}(2 + \lambda + M)\}}{\Gamma\{\frac{1}{4}(\alpha + 1) + \frac{1}{2}(1 + j)^{-1}(2 + \lambda + M)\}}. \quad \dots(34)$$

### 3.3. Numerical Solution

The partial differential equations (4) and (5) under boundary conditions (6) and initial conditions (8) and (9) and the ordinary differential equations (12) and (13) under boundary conditions (14) have been solved numerically using an implicit finite-difference scheme in combination with the quasilinearization technique. Since the detailed description of the method is given elsewhere<sup>11,12</sup>, it is not presented here. The effects of step sizes  $\Delta\eta$  and  $\Delta t^*$  and the edge of the boundary layer  $\eta_\infty$  on the solution have been studied and optimum values of  $\Delta\eta$ ,  $\Delta t^*$  and  $\eta_\infty$  have been obtained. Consequently, we have taken  $\Delta\eta = 0.05$  and  $\Delta t^* = 0.1$  for computation. Also we have taken the values of the edge of the boundary layer ( $\eta_\infty$ ) between 4 and 8 depending on the values of the parameters. The results presented here are independent of step sizes and  $\eta_\infty$  at least up to 4th decimal place. For computation, the free stream velocity distributions have been taken to be of the form  $\varphi(t^*) = 1 \pm \epsilon t^{*2}$  and  $\varphi(t) = (1 + \epsilon_1 \cos \omega^* t^*)/(1 + \epsilon_1)$ , where  $\epsilon$  and  $\epsilon_1$  are constants and  $\omega^*$  is the frequency parameter. A typical case takes 15.2 seconds CPU time on DEC-1090 computer. For the self-similar case where  $\varphi(t^*) = (1 - \lambda t^*)^{-1}$  a typical case takes 1.7 seconds CPU time.

## 4. RESULTS AND DISCUSSION

Computations have been carried out for various values of the parameters  $M$ ,  $b$ ,  $j$  and  $\lambda$ . However, the results are presented only for some representative values of these parameters. Figs. 1 and 2 present the comparison with the results of the previous investigators. The results corresponding to the accelerating free stream velocity ( $\varphi(t^*) = 1 + \epsilon t^{*2}$ ,  $\epsilon > 0$ ) are presented in Figs. 3-6. The results corresponding to the fluctuating free stream velocity ( $\varphi(t^*) = [1 + \epsilon_1 \cos \omega^* t^*]/(1 + \epsilon_1)$ ) are given in Fig. 7. The results for the self-similar case ( $\varphi(t^*) = (1 - \lambda t^*)^{-1}$ ) are shown in Figs. 8-11.

In order to assess the accuracy of our method, we have compared our skin-friction and heat-transfer results ( $f_w''$ ,  $-g_w'$ ) for both accelerating flow ( $\varphi(t^*) = 1 + t^*$ ) and fluctuating flow ( $\varphi(t^*) = 1 + \epsilon_1 \sin^2(\omega^* t^*)$ ) for  $M = b = j = 0$  with the corresponding results of Kumari and Nath<sup>13</sup> and found them in excellent agreement. However,



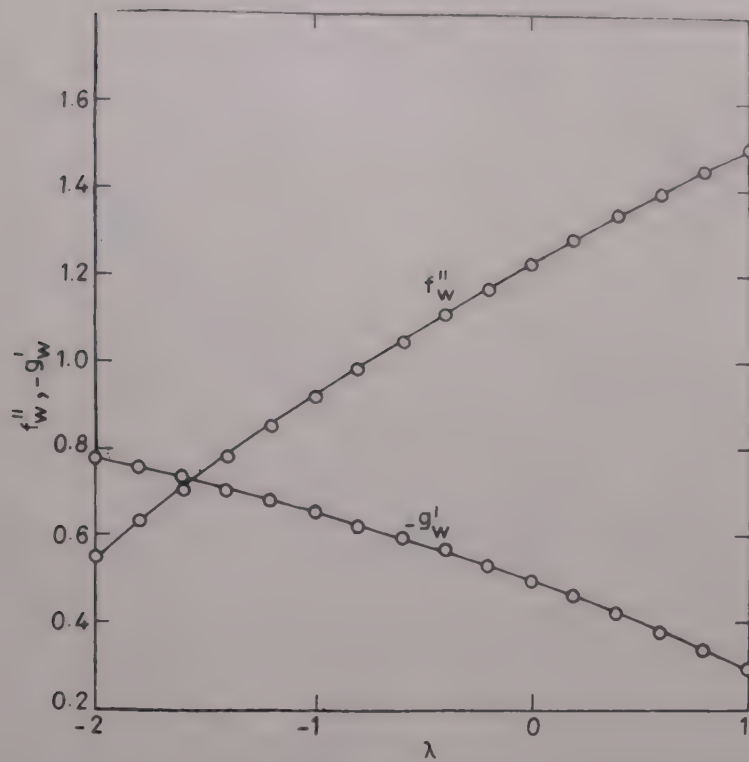


FIG. 2. Comparison of skin-friction and heat-transfer results  $(f''_w, -g'_w)$  for  $\phi(t^*) = (1 - \lambda t^*)^{-1}$  (self-similar case),  $M = b = j = 0$ ,  $Pr = 0.7$ , —, Present results; 0, Yang.

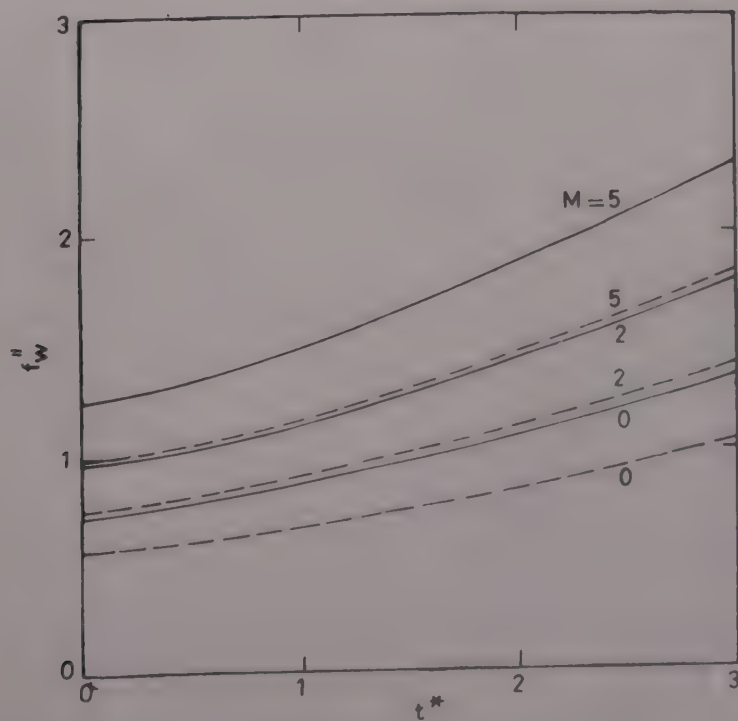


FIG. 3. Skin friction parameter  $(f''_w)$  for  $\phi(t^*) = 1 + \epsilon t^{*2}$ ,  $\epsilon = 0.25$ ,  $b = 0.5$ . —,  $j = 0$ ; ..... ,  $j = 1$ .

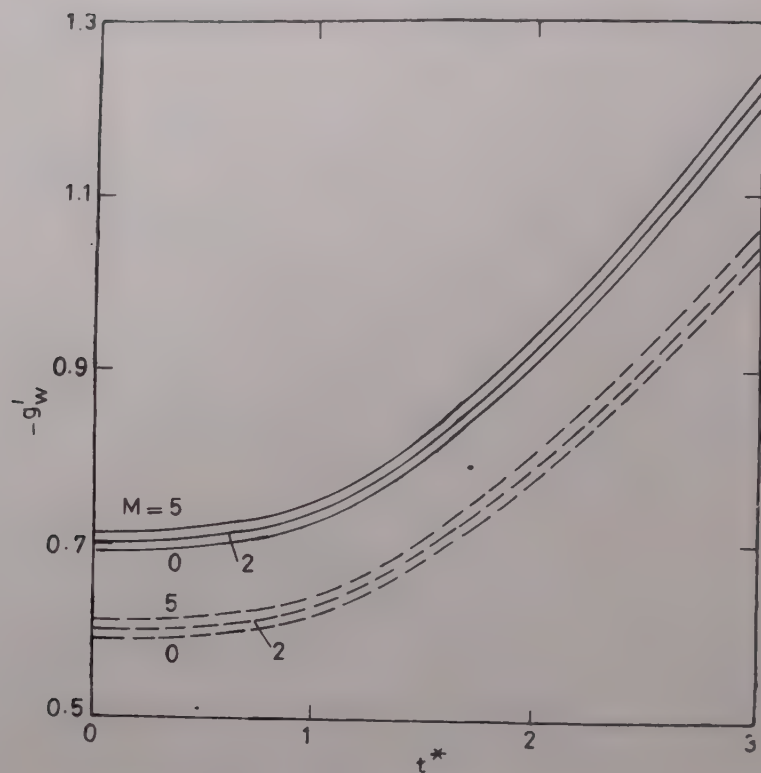


FIG. 4. Heat transfer parameter  $(-g'_w)$  for  $\phi(t^*) = 1 + \epsilon t^{*2}$ ,  $\epsilon = 0.25$ ,  $b = 0.5$ ,  $Pr = 0.73$   
 —,  $j = 0$ ; ..... ,  $j = 1$ .

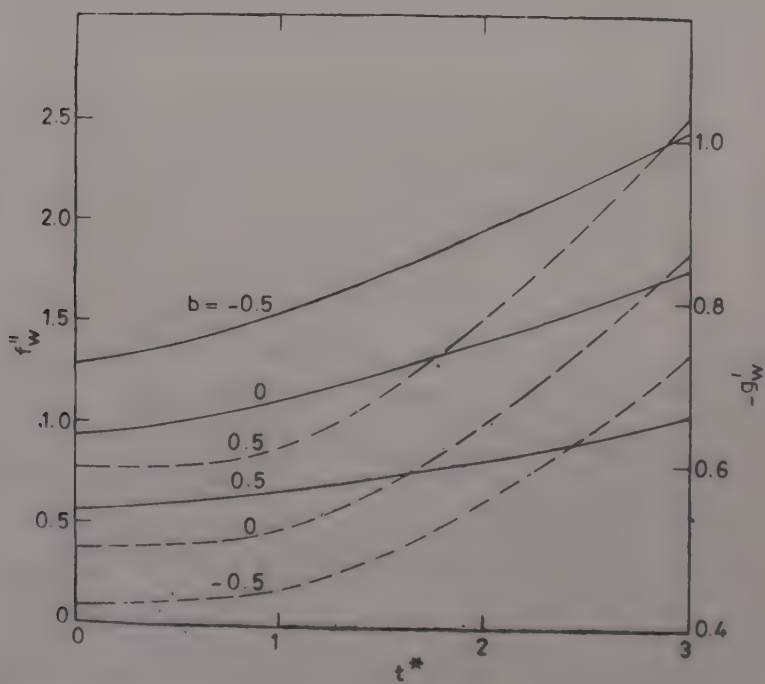


FIG. 5. Skin-friction and heat-transfer parameters  $(f''_w, -g'_w)$  for  $\phi(t^*) = 1 + \epsilon t^{*2}$ ,  $\epsilon = 0.25$ ,  
 $M = 0$ ,  $j = 1$ ,  $Pr = 0.73$ . —,  $f''_w$ ; ..... ,  $-g'_w$ .

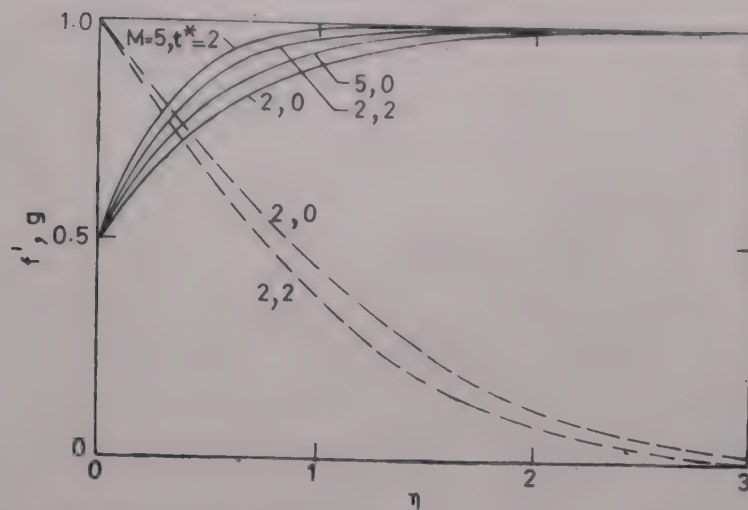


FIG. 6. Velocity and temperature profiles  $f', g$  for  $\varphi(t^*) = 1 + \epsilon t^{*2}$ ,  $\epsilon = 0.25$ ,  $b = 0.5$ ,  $j = 1$ ,  $Pr = 0.73$ , —,  $f'$ ; ----,  $g$ .

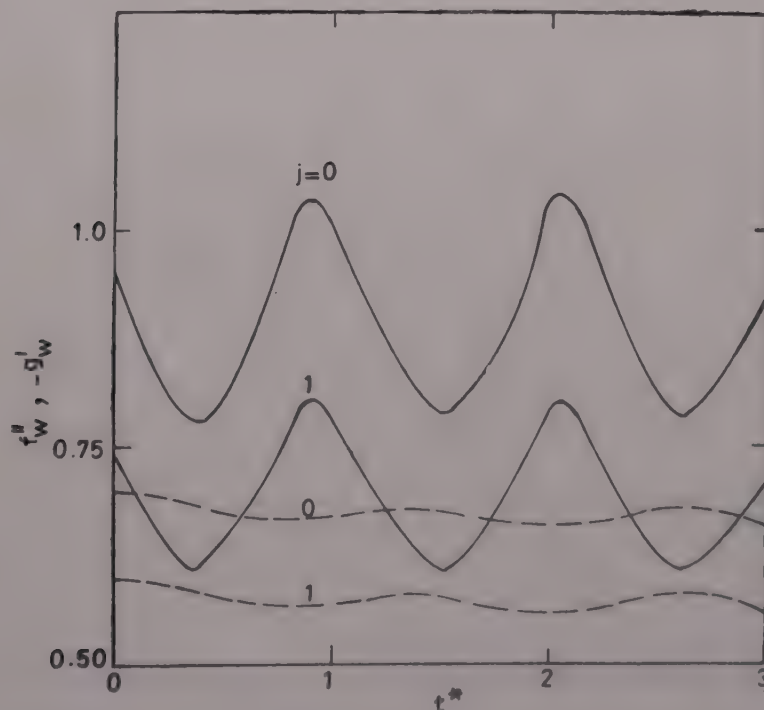


FIG. 7. Skin-friction and heat-transfer parameter  $(f''_w, -g'_w)$  for  $\varphi(t^*) = [1 + \epsilon_1 \cos(\omega^* t^*)]/(1 + \epsilon_1)$ ,  $\epsilon_1 = 0, 1$ ,  $b = 0.5$ ,  $M=2$ ,  $\omega^* = 5.6$ ,  $Pr = 0.73$ . —,  $f''_w$ ; ----,  $-g'_w$ .

for the sake of brevity, the comparison is given only for  $\varphi(t^*) = 1 + t^*$  in Fig. 1. We have also compared our skin-friction and heat transfer results  $(f''_w, -g'_w)$  for the



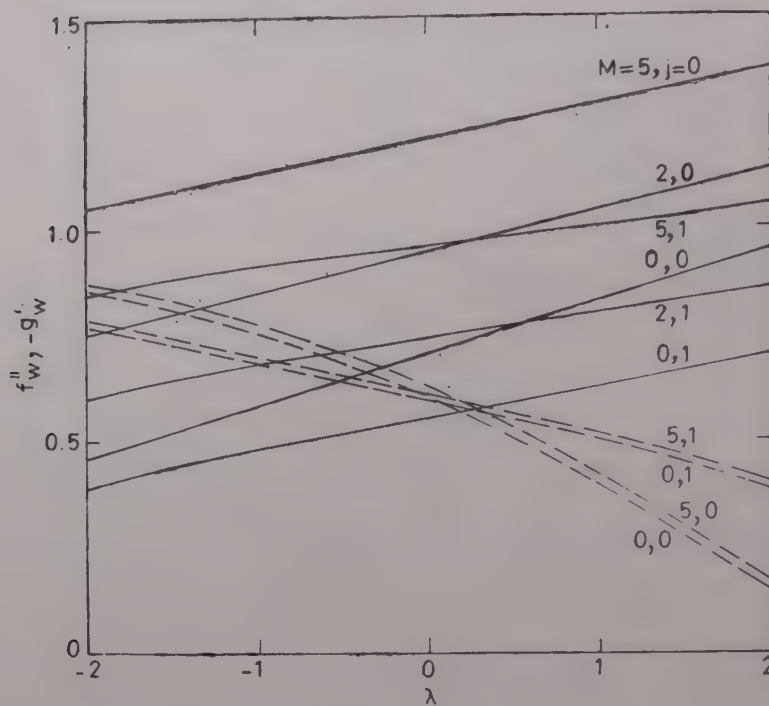


FIG. 8. Skin-friction and heat-transfer parameter  $(f''_w, -g'_w)$  for  $\varphi(t^*) = (1 - \lambda t^*)^{-1}$ ,  $b = 0.5$

$j = 1$ ,  $Pr = 0.73$ . —,  $f''_w$ ; ·····,  $-g'_w$ .

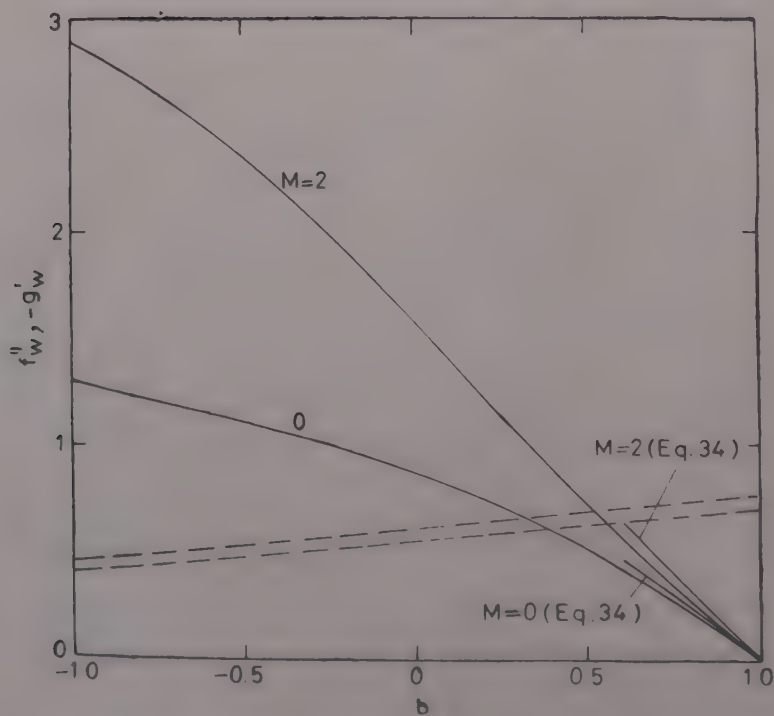


FIG. 9. Skin-friction and heat-transfer parameters  $(f''_w, -g'_w)$  for  $\varphi(t^*) = (1 - \lambda t^*)^{-1}$

$\lambda = -0.5$ ,  $j = 1$ ,  $Pr = 0.75$ . —,  $f''_w$ ; ·····,  $-g'_w$ .

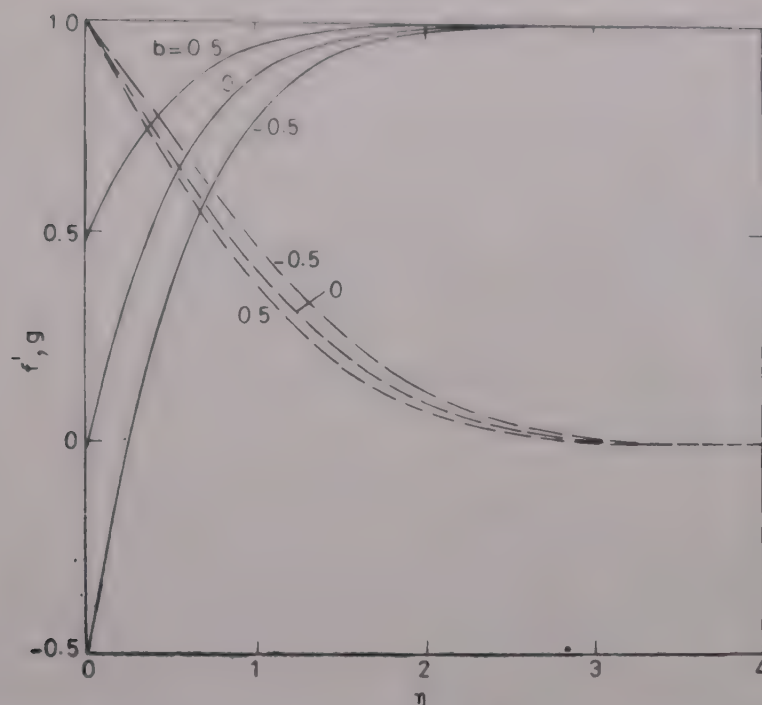


FIG. 10. Velocity and temperature profiles ( $f'$ ,  $g$ ) for  $\varphi(t^*) = (1 - \lambda t^*)^{-1}$ ,  $M = 2$ ,  $\lambda = -0.5$ ,  $j = 0$ ,  $Pr = 0.73$ . —,  $f'$ ; ----,  $g$ .

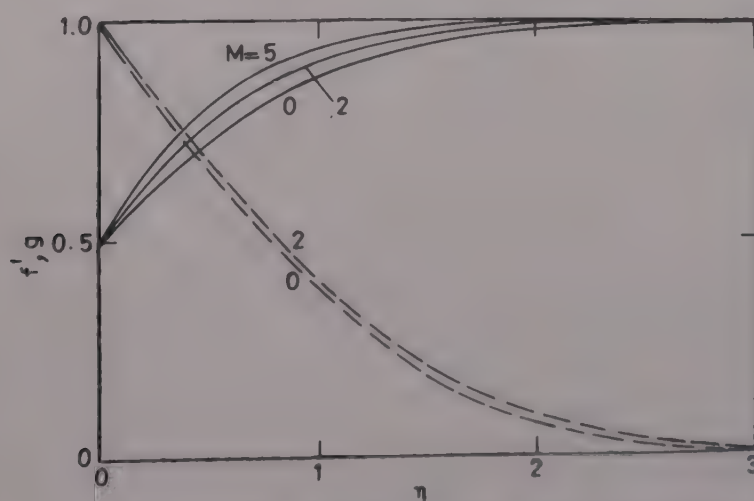


FIG. 11. Velocity and temperature profiles ( $f'$ ,  $g$ ) for  $\varphi(t^*) = (1 - \lambda t^*)^{-1}$ ,  $\lambda = -0.5$ ,  $j = 1$ ,  $b = 0.5$ ,  $Pr = 0.73$ . —,  $f'$ ; ----,  $g$ .

self-similar flow for  $M = b = j = 0$  with those of Yang<sup>9</sup> and they were also found to be in excellent agreement. The comparison is shown in Fig. 2.

The effect of the magnetic parameter  $M$  and time  $t^*$  on the skin friction and heat-transfer parameters ( $f_w''$ ,  $-g_w'$ ) is shown in Figs. 3–4. For a given time  $t^*$ , the skin-friction and heat-transfer parameter ( $f_w''$ ,  $-g_w'$ ) increase as  $M$  increases. However,

the effect of  $M$  is more pronounced on the skin friction  $\left(f_w''\right)$  than on the heat transfer  $\left(-g_w'\right)$  because the magnetic term explicitly occurs only in the momentum equation. Similarly, for a given  $M$ , both  $f_w''$  and  $-g_w'$  increase with time  $t^*$ , but the effect is more pronounced for  $t^* > 1$ . If the free stream velocity distribution is taken to be decelerating with time ( $\varphi(t^*) = 1 - \epsilon t^{*2}$ ,  $\epsilon > 0$ ), then  $f_w''$  and  $-g_w'$  decrease as  $t^*$  increases. However, for the sake of brevity, the results for  $\varphi(t^*) = 1 - \epsilon t^{*2}$ ,  $\epsilon > 0$  are not presented here.

The effect of wall velocity  $b$  on the skin friction and heat transfer  $\left(f_w'', -g_w'\right)$  is presented in Fig. 5. The skin friction is found to decrease as  $b$  increases, but the heat transfer increases. This is true for all values of  $M$  and  $t^*$ . This is due to the fact that as  $b \rightarrow 1$  ( $u_w \rightarrow u_e$ ), the fluid tends to be inviscid. This causes considerable reduction in the skin friction as  $b \rightarrow 1$ . On the other hand, the difference between the wall temperature and free stream temperature ( $T_w \rightarrow T_\infty$ ) increases which results in increase in heat transfer.

The effect of the magnetic parameter  $M$  and time  $t^*$  on the velocity and temperature profiles ( $f, g$ ) is shown in Fig. 6. The velocity and temperature profiles ( $f', g$ ) become more steep as  $M$  or  $t^*$  increases, because of the reduction in the momentum and thermal boundary layer thicknesses. Also for a given  $M$  or  $t^*$ , the thermal boundary layer thickness, is more than the momentum boundary layer thickness.

The skin-friction and heat-transfer parameters  $\left(f_w'', -g_w'\right)$  for the oscillatory free stream velocity given by  $\varphi(t^*) = (1 + \epsilon_1 \cos(\omega^* t^*)) / (1 + \epsilon_1)$  are given in Fig. 7. It is observed that the skin friction  $\left(f_w''\right)$  responds more to the fluctuations of the free stream as compared to the heat transfer  $\left(-g_w'\right)$ , because the skin friction parameter is directly proportional to the velocity gradient which is influenced more by the free stream velocity as compared to the temperature gradient.

As mentioned earlier, the results for the self-similar flow have been presented in Figs. 8–11. The effects of the magnetic parameter  $M$  and the unsteady parameter  $\lambda$  on the skin friction and heat transfer parameter  $\left(f_w'', -g_w'\right)$  are shown in Fig. 8. The skin friction parameter  $\left(f_w''\right)$  increases as the magnetic parameter  $M$  or unsteady parameter  $\lambda$  increases. However the heat transfer parameter  $\left(-g_w'\right)$  increases as  $M$  increases, but it decreases as  $\lambda$  increases. The reason for such a behaviour is that both momentum and thermal boundary layer thicknesses decrease as  $M$  increases,



but as  $\lambda$  increases momentum boundary layer thickness decreases and thermal boundary layer thickness increases.

The effect of the velocity of the moving wall  $b$  on the skin friction and heat transfer parameters  $(f'_w, -g'_w)$  is shown in Fig. 9. It also contains the skin friction results obtained analytically for  $b \approx 1$  (see eqn. (34)). The analytical result is found to be in good agreement with the numerical result. The effect of  $b$  is found to be more pronounced on the skin friction parameter as compared to the heat-transfer parameter,  $(-g'_w)$ . It is observed that  $f''_w$  decreases rapidly as  $b$  approaches 1 and  $f'_w = 0$  for  $b = 1$ . This is due to the fact that for  $b = 1$ , the flow becomes potential and hence the skin friction parameter  $f''_w$  vanishes.

The effects of the wall velocity  $b$  and the magnetic parameter  $M$  on the velocity and temperature profiles  $(f', -g)$  are given in Figs. 10 and 11, respectively. For a given  $M$ , the velocity profile  $f'$  becomes more steep as  $b$  decreases, but the temperature profile  $g$  becomes less steep. Similarly, for a given  $b$ , the velocity and temperature profiles  $(f', g)$  become more steep as the magnetic parameter  $M$  increases. The reason for such a behaviour has been explained earlier.

## 5. CONCLUSIONS

The skin friction and heat transfer results are found to be significantly affected by the free stream velocity, magnetic field and the wall velocity. However, their effects on the heat transfer is comparatively less as compared to that on the skin friction. The self-similar solution exists when the free stream velocity, wall velocity and the square of the magnetic field vary inversely as a linear function of time. The skin friction and heat transfer increase as the magnetic parameter increases. However, the skin friction decreases as the wall velocity increases, but the heat transfer increases. The skin friction and heat transfer for the axisymmetric flow are found to be less than those of the two-dimensional flow.

## REFERENCES

1. B. C. Sakiadis, *AIChE J.* **7** (1961), 26, 221, 467.
2. D. E. Bourne, and D. G. Elliston, *Int. J. Heat Mass Transfer* **12** (1970), 583.
3. L. Robillard, *J. Appl. Mech.* **38** (1971), 550.
4. A. V. Murthy, and K. S. Hebbar, *AIAA J.* **12** (1974), 732.
5. L. J. Crane, *Ingenieur-Archiv* **43** (1974), 203.
6. E. Bekturganov, K. E. Dzhaugashtin, Z. B. Sakipov, and A. L. Yarin, *Fluid Mech. (Soviet Research)* **11** (1982), 14.
7. W. H. H. Banks, *J. de Mecanique Theorique et appliquee* **2** (1983), 375.
8. D. R. Jeng, T. C. A. Chang, and K. J. DeWitt, *J. Heat Transfer* **108** (1986), 532.
9. K. T. Yang, *J. Appl. Mech.* **25** (1958), 421.
10. C. D. Surma Devi, and G. Nath, *Indian J. pure appl. Math.* **17** (1986), 1405.

11. J. R. Radbill, and G. A. McCue, *Quasilinearization and Nonlinear Problems in Fluid and and Orbital Mechanics*. Elsevier Publishing Company, New York, 1970.
12. K. Inouye, and A. Tate, *AIAA J.* **12** (1974), 558.
13. M. Kumari, and G. Nath, *J. Appl. Mech.* **47** (1980), 241.
14. E. T. Whittaker, and G. N. Watson, *Modern Analysis*. Cambridge University Press. London, 1963, p. 347.
15. L. T. Watson, and C. Wang, *Phys. Fluids* **22** (1979), 2267.

## CONVECTION IN A STRATIFIED FLOW IN AN INCLINED POROUS CHANNEL

S. RAMAKRISHNA\*, S. SREENADH† AND P. V. ARUNACHALAM\*

\**Department of Mathematics, S. V. U. College, Tirupati*

†*Department of Mathematics, SPM Viswavidyalayam, Tirupati*

(Received 5 January 1987; after revision 12 January 1988)

The flow of a fluid of variable viscosity in an inclined channel bounded by two permeable layers is considered. The flow between the permeable layers is governed by Navier-Stokes equations. The flow in the porous medium is governed by Darcy law. The velocity field and the temperature distribution are obtained and the results are discussed.

### 1. NOMENCLATURE

$\bar{q}$	=	$(u, v, w)$ velocity of the fluid
$\rho, \rho_0$	=	density of the fluid, density at $T = T_0$
$p$	=	pressure
$T$	=	temperature
$T_0$	=	ambient temperature
$k$	=	permeability of the porous medium
$Gr$	=	Grashof number
$g$	=	acceleration due to gravity
$h$	=	distance between porous beds
$Q$	=	Darcy velocity
$Q_1$	=	average Darcy velocity in the upper bed
$Q_2$	=	average Darcy velocity in the lower bed
$\phi$	=	angle of the inclination of the channel to the horizontal
$\sigma = \frac{h}{\sqrt{k}}$	=	dimensionless parameter
$\gamma = \beta h$	=	dimensionless parameter



- $\mu$  = coefficient of viscosity  
 $\nu$  = coefficient of kinematic viscosity  
 $\beta$  = volumetric expansion coefficient

$T_0 - \frac{\Delta T}{2}$  = temperature of the upper bed

$T_0 + \frac{\Delta T}{2}$  = temperature of the lower bed.

## 2. INTRODUCTION

Convective flow problems involving porous media have important applications in various disciplines like petroleum engineering, geophysics, agricultural engineering and so on. The study of blood flow in pulmonary alveolar sheet where the fluid is between two permeable layers is of considerable importance in biomechanics.

Flow in a porous medium is assumed to be governed by either Darcy law or a non-Darcy law. Beavers and Joseph<sup>2</sup> postulated a slip boundary condition at the nominal surface of the porous bed. Further they discussed the Poiseuille flow over a permeable bed and verified BJ condition experimentally. Rudraiah<sup>4</sup> made extensive studies on problems of flows through/past porous media. Rudraiah and Wilfred<sup>4</sup> investigated the natural convection in an inclined channel bounded by porous media. Channabasappa and Ranganna<sup>3</sup> examined the flow of a fluid of variable viscosity over a permeable bed.

In this paper, an exact solution for the flow of a fluid of variable viscosity between two inclined porous beds is obtained. The flow is governed by Navier-Stokes equations in the free flow region and is assumed to be described by Darcy law in the lower and upper porous beds. The temperature distribution, the velocity distribution, the mass flow rate and its fractional increase are obtained and discussed.

## 3. MATHEMATICAL FORMULATION

Consider the flow of stratified fluid of variable viscosity between two inclined porous beds. The flow is possible because of the imbalance between pressure and buoyancy forces when the Grashof number is not equal to zero, Batchelor<sup>1</sup>. The channel is inclined at an angle  $\phi$  with the horizontal. The lower and upper permeable beds are kept at  $T_0 + \frac{1}{2} \Delta T$  and  $T_0 - \frac{1}{2} \Delta T$  temperatures respectively. The flow is in  $x$ -direction and  $z$ -direction is taken perpendicular to the beds. Cartesian coordinate system is used.

The following assumptions are made to derive the basic equations of motion :

- (1) The flow is steady and Grashof number is small.
- (2) The velocity component  $u$  in  $x$ -direction is a function of  $z$  and  $\phi$  only.

(3) The dissipation function  $\Phi$  is neglected, the heat transfer takes place by conduction only and therefore the temperature is linear in  $z$ .

(4) The pressure is a function of  $x$  and  $z$  only.  $p = p(x, z)$ ,  $\frac{\partial p}{\partial x} = \lambda$ , a constant.

(5) The viscosity coefficient and density decay exponentially with  $z$ .  
i.e.,

$$\mu = \mu_0 e^{-\beta z}, \rho = \rho_0 e^{-\beta z}.$$

The basic equations for the flow under consideration are

$$\rho = \rho_0 [1 - \beta (T - T_0)] \quad \dots(3.1)$$

$$\frac{d^2 u}{dz^2} - \beta \frac{du}{dz} = \frac{1}{\mu_0} (\lambda + \rho g \sin \phi) e^{\beta z} \quad \dots(3.2)$$

$$\frac{\partial p}{\partial z} + \rho g \cos \phi = 0 \quad \dots(3.3)$$

$$\frac{\partial u}{\partial x} = 0 \quad \dots(3.4)$$

$$\frac{d^2 T}{dz^2} = 0. \quad \dots(3.5)$$

The Darcy velocity is given by

$$Q = Q_0 e^{\beta z} \quad \dots(3.6)$$

where

$$Q_0 = - \frac{k}{\mu_0} (\lambda + \rho g \sin \phi).$$

The boundary conditions are

$$\frac{du}{dz} = - \frac{\alpha}{\sqrt{k}} (u_{B1} - Q_1) \text{ at } z = h/2 \quad \dots(3.7)$$

$$\frac{du}{dz} = \frac{\alpha}{\sqrt{k}} (u_{B2} - Q_2) \text{ at } z = -h/2 \quad \dots(3.8)$$

$$u = u_{B1} \text{ at } z = h/2 \quad \dots(3.9)$$

$$u = u_{B2} \text{ at } z = -h/2 \quad \dots(3.10)$$

$$T = T_0 - \frac{1}{2} \Delta T \text{ at } z = h/2 \quad \dots(3.11)$$

$$T = T_0 + \frac{1}{2} \Delta T \text{ at } z = -h/2 \quad \dots(3.12)$$

$$p = 0 \text{ at } x = 0, z = 0. \quad \dots(3.13)$$

## 4. NON-DIMENSIONALIZATION OF THE FLOW QUANTITIES

The following non-dimensional parameters are introduced to make the governing equations and boundary conditions dimensionless.

$$\begin{aligned} u^* &= \frac{u}{\nu/h}, \quad z^* = \frac{z}{h}, \quad x^* = \frac{x}{h}, \quad T^* = \frac{T}{\Delta T}, \quad T_0^* = \frac{T_0}{\Delta T} \\ p^* &= \frac{p}{g\rho_0 h}, \quad u_{B1}^* = \frac{u_{B1}}{\nu/h}, \quad u_{B2}^* = \frac{u_{B2}}{\nu/h}, \quad Q^* = \frac{Q}{\nu/h}, \quad Q_1^* = \frac{Q_1}{\nu/h} \\ Q_2^* &= \frac{Q_2}{\nu/h}, \quad \lambda^* = \lambda/g\rho_0, \quad M^* = \frac{M}{\mu_0}. \end{aligned} \quad \dots(4.1)$$

In view of (4.1), eqns. (3.1) - (3.13), after neglecting asterisks, become

$$\rho = \rho_0 [1 - \beta (T - T_0) \Delta T] \quad \dots(4.2)$$

$$\frac{d^2 u}{dz^2} - \gamma \frac{du}{dz} - \eta \left( \frac{\partial p}{\partial x} + \sin \phi \right) e^{\gamma z} + Gr (T - T_0) e^{\gamma z} \sin \phi = 0 \quad \dots(4.3)$$

$$\frac{\partial p}{\partial z} + \left[ 1 - \frac{Gr}{\eta} (T - T_0) \right] \cos \phi = 0 \quad \dots(4.4)$$

where

$$\eta = \frac{gh^3}{\nu^2}, \quad Gr = \eta \beta \Delta T$$

$$\frac{\partial u}{\partial x} = 0 \quad \dots(4.5)$$

$$\frac{dT}{dz^2} = 0 \quad \dots(4.6)$$

$$Q = - \frac{e^{\gamma z}}{\sigma^2} (-p + z Gr \sin \phi) \quad \dots(4.7)$$

where

$$P = -\eta (\lambda + \sin \phi).$$

$$\frac{du}{dz} = -\alpha \sigma (u_{B1} - Q_1) \text{ at } z = \frac{1}{2} \quad \dots(4.8)$$

$$\frac{du}{dz} = \alpha \sigma (u_{B2} - Q_2) \text{ at } z = -\frac{1}{2} \quad \dots(4.9)$$

$$u = u_{B1} \text{ at } z = \frac{1}{2} \quad \dots(4.10)$$

$$u = u_{B2} \text{ at } z = -\frac{1}{2} \quad \dots(4.11)$$

$$T = T_0 - \frac{1}{2} \text{ at } z = \frac{1}{2} \quad \dots(4.12)$$



$$T = T_0 + \frac{1}{2} \text{ at } z = -\frac{1}{2} \quad \dots(4.13)$$

$$p = 0 \text{ at } x = 0, z = 0. \quad \dots(4.14)$$

### 5. SOLUTION OF PROBLEM

The temperature distribution is obtained as given below on solving (4.6) and using the boundary conditions (4.12) and (4.13).

$$T - T_0 = -z. \quad \dots(5.1)$$

On solving (4.3), subject to the boundary conditions (4.8)-(4.11), the velocity field is obtained as

$$u = A + B e^{\gamma z} - \frac{Pz}{\gamma} e^{\gamma z} + \frac{e^{\gamma z} Gr \sin \phi}{\gamma} \left( \frac{z^2}{2} - \frac{z}{\gamma} \right). \quad \dots (5.2)$$

The constants  $A, B$  etc. are given by

$$a_1 A + a_2 B = a_3$$

$$b_1 A + b_2 B = b_3$$

$$a_1 = -\alpha\sigma$$

$$a_2 = -(\alpha\sigma + \gamma) e^{\gamma/2}$$

$$a_3 = \alpha\sigma \left[ -\frac{P}{e\gamma} e^{\gamma/2} + \frac{e^{\gamma/2} Gr \sin \phi}{\gamma} \left( \frac{1}{8} - \frac{1}{2\gamma} \right) - Q_1 \right]$$

$$+ e^{\gamma/2} \left[ -\frac{P}{2} - \frac{P}{\gamma} + \frac{Gr \sin \phi}{8} - \frac{Gr \sin \phi}{\gamma^2} \right]$$

$$b_1 = \alpha\sigma$$

$$b_2 = (\alpha\sigma - \gamma) e^{-\gamma/2}$$

$$b_3 = -\alpha\sigma \left[ \frac{P}{2\gamma} e^{-\gamma/2} + \frac{e^{-\gamma/2} Gr \sin \phi}{\gamma} \left( \frac{1}{8} + \frac{1}{2\gamma} \right) - Q_2 \right]$$

$$+ e^{-\gamma/2} \left[ \frac{P}{2} - \frac{P}{\gamma} + \frac{Gr \sin \phi}{8} - \frac{Gr \sin \phi}{\gamma^2} \right]$$

$$A = \frac{a_3 b_2 - a_2 b_3}{a_1 b_2 - a_2 b_1}$$

$$B = \frac{a_1 b_3 - a_3 b_1}{a_1 b_2 - a_2 b_1}.$$

The slip velocities at the upper and lower beds are given by

$$u_{B1} = A + B e^{\gamma/2} - \frac{P}{2\gamma} e^{\gamma/2} + \frac{e^{\gamma/2} Gr \sin \phi}{\gamma} \left( \frac{1}{8} - \frac{1}{2\gamma} \right) \quad \dots(5.3)$$

$$u_{B_2} = A + Be^{-\gamma/2} + \frac{P}{2\gamma} e^{-\gamma/2} + \frac{e^{-\gamma/2} Gr \sin \phi}{\gamma} \left( \frac{1}{8} + \frac{1}{2\gamma} \right). \quad \dots(5.4)$$

The pressure distribution is given by

$$P = - \left[ z + \frac{z^2 Gr}{2\eta} \right] \cos \phi - \lambda x. \quad \dots(5.5)$$

The average Darcy velocities in the upper and lower beds are given as

$$Q_1 = - \frac{e^{\gamma/2}}{\sigma^2} (-P + \frac{1}{2} Gr \sin \phi) \quad \dots(5.6)$$

$$Q_2 = - \frac{e^{-\gamma/2}}{\sigma^2} (-P - \frac{1}{2} Gr \sin \phi). \quad \dots(5.7)$$

## 6. DISCUSSIONS

1. *Mass flow rate*—The dimensionless mass flow rate per unit width of the channel bounded by two inclined permeable beds is given by

$$\begin{aligned} M &= \int_{-1/2}^{1/2} e^{-\gamma z} u dz \\ &= \frac{2A}{\gamma} \sinh \frac{\gamma}{2} + B + \frac{Gr \sin \phi}{24\gamma}. \end{aligned} \quad \dots(6.1)$$

Letting  $\sigma \rightarrow \infty$  in (6.1), we obtain the mass flow rate per unit width of the channel bounded by rigid walls. It is given by

$$M_1 = \frac{2A_1}{\gamma} \sinh \frac{\gamma}{2} + B_1 + \frac{Gr \sin \phi}{24\gamma} \quad \dots(6.2)$$

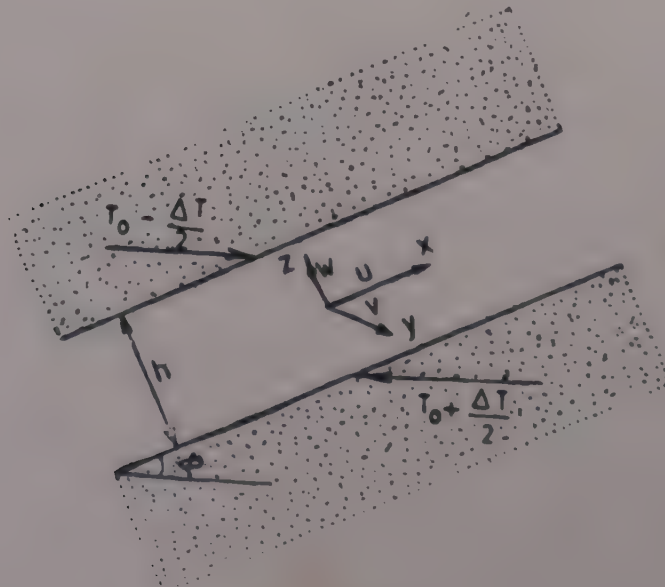


FIG. 1. Physical Model.

where

$$A_1 = - \left[ \frac{P}{\gamma} + \frac{Gr \sin \phi}{\gamma^2} \right] / 2 \sinh \frac{1}{2} \gamma$$

$$B_1 = \coth \frac{\gamma}{2} \left[ \frac{P}{2\gamma} + \frac{Gr \sin \phi}{2\gamma^2} \right] - \frac{Gr \sin \phi}{8\gamma}$$

2. *Fractional increase*—The fractional increase in mass flow rate through the inclined porous channel over the inclined flow with rigid walls is

$$F = \frac{M - M_1}{M_1} = \frac{48 \sinh \frac{1}{2} \gamma (A - A_1) + 24\gamma (B - B_1)}{48A_1 \sinh \frac{1}{2} \gamma + 24B_1 \gamma + Gr \sin \phi} \quad \dots(6.3)$$

3. The velocity distribution (5.2) and fractional increase (6.3) are numerically computed for different values of  $P$  and  $\sigma$  with  $Gr \sin \Phi = 25$ ,  $\alpha = 0.1$  and  $\gamma = 1$ . They are shown in Fig. 2 and 3. The velocity profiles are in the

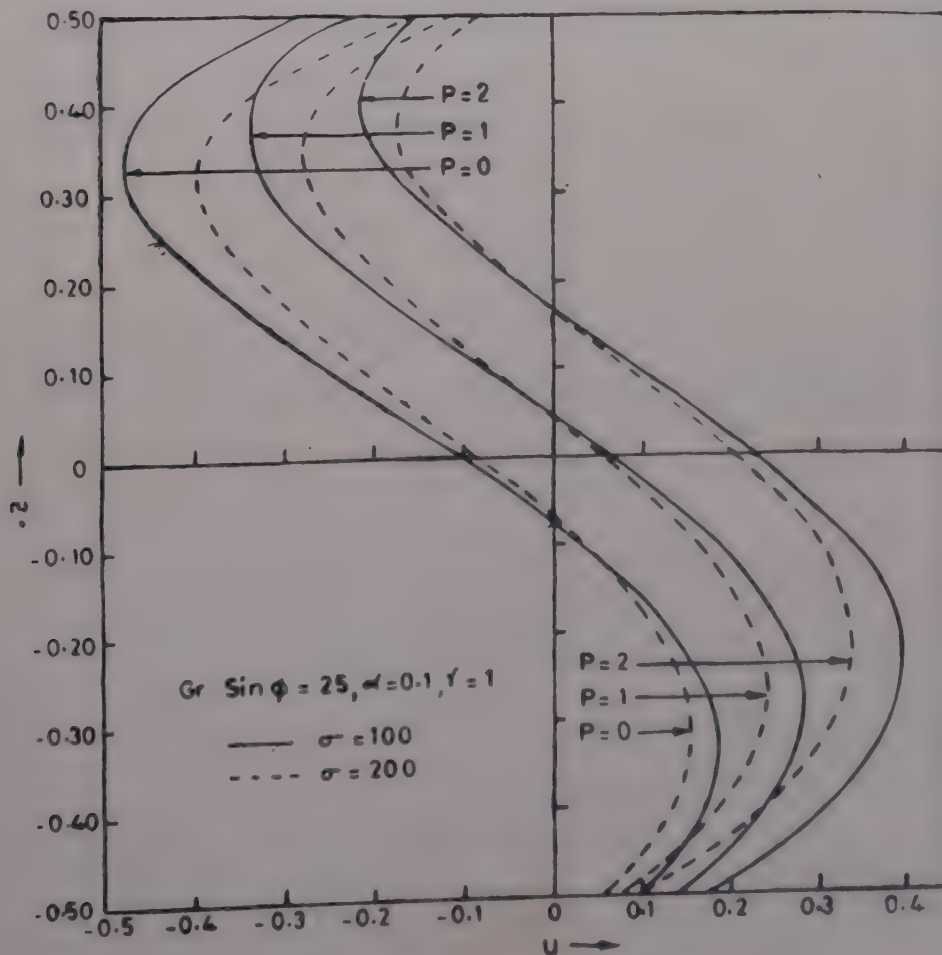


FIG. 2. Velocity profiles.



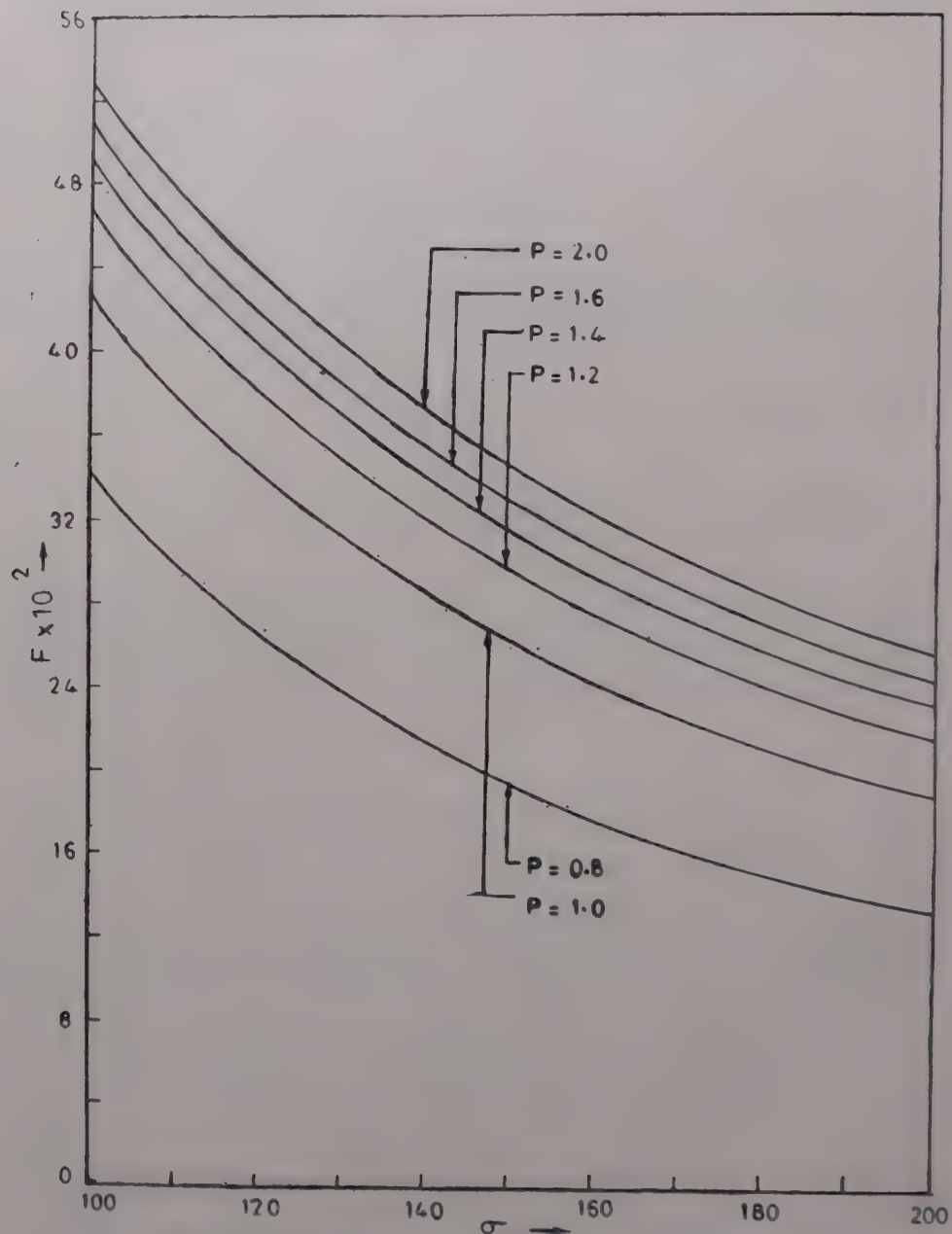


FIG. 3. Fractional increase in mass flow rate.

shape of  $S$  and resemble the velocity profiles of Rudraiah and Wilfred<sup>5</sup> for a fixed  $\gamma$ . For fixed  $\sigma$ , the velocity increases with the increase in  $P$ . For fixed  $P$ , the velocity increases in the bottom regions of the channel, with the increase in  $\sigma$  whereas the velocity decreases in the top regions of the channel with the increase in  $\sigma$ . The back flow is found in the upper half of the channel. It is due to the adverse pressure gradient  $P$  surpassing the action of the viscous forces in the region. In Fig. 3 fractional increase  $F$  is plotted against the permeability parameter  $\sigma$  for various values of  $P$ . For fixed  $P$ ,  $F$  decreases with the increases in  $\sigma$ . The fractional increase raises with the increase in  $P$ . As  $P$  increases, the gap between these  $F$  curves narrows down.

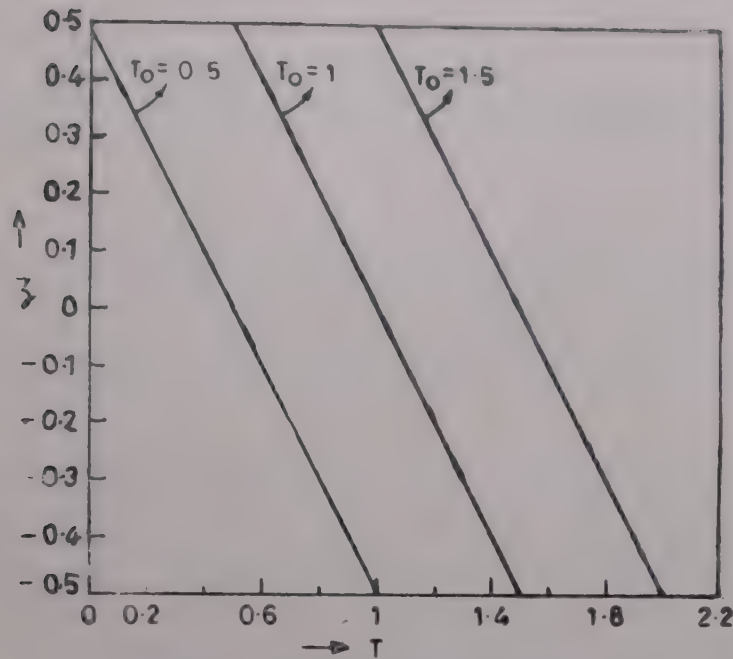


FIG. 4. Temperature Distribution.

The temperature is numerically evaluated for various values of  $T_0$  and is shown in Fig. 4. The conclusions are given below.

Fixed parameter	Varying parameter	Behaviour of the variable	Effect on the temperature
$T_0$	$z$	increases	decreases
$z$	$T_0$	increases	increases

We note that the temperature is independent of the permeability  $k$ .

#### REFERENCES

1. G. K. Batchelor, *Quart. Appl. Math.* **12** (1954), 209.
2. G. S. Beavers, and D. D. Joseph, *J. Fluid Mech.* **30** (1967), 197.
3. M. N. Channabasappa, and G. Ranganna, *Proc Indian Acad. Sci.* **83A** (1976), 145.
4. N. Rudraiah, Presidential address, 28th ISTAM, Andhra Univ., Waltair, 1983.
5. N. Rudraiah, and Vasantha Wilfred, *Trans. ASME, J. appl. Mech.* **49** (1982), 266.

## TRANSIENT FREE CONVECTION FLOW AROUND TWO-DIMENSIONAL OR AXISYMMETRIC BODIES

C. INDIRA AND M. ARUNACHALAM

*Department of Mathematics, College of Engineering, Anna University, Madras 600025*

*(Received 24 December 1986; after revision 14 March 1988)*

An analysis of unsteady free convection flow around two-dimensional or axisymmetric bodies heated impulsively is considered by taking the surface temperature as an exponential function of time. The method of matched asymptotic expansions is used to solve the Navier-Stokes equations including the buoyancy forces. This theory is applied for free convection flow past a horizontal circular cylinder and a sphere to bring out the importance of displacement and curvature effects on heat transfer and skin friction.

### 1. INTRODUCTION

When the free convection flow starts from rest, the unsteady terms in the momentum and energy equations are more significant than the inertia terms for a small time  $t_0$

$$\frac{U_c t_0}{L} = \epsilon \ll 1 \quad \dots (1)$$

where  $L$  is the characteristic length,  $U_c$  is the characteristic velocity of the body. As  $\epsilon \rightarrow 0$ ,  $Gr \rightarrow \infty$  the free convection around a vertical flat plate is governed by the unsteady one dimensional flow equations. This has been considered for a step input in the surface temperature by Mohanty<sup>1</sup>, Menond and Yang<sup>2</sup>, Goldstein and Briggs<sup>3</sup>. Elliot<sup>4</sup> analysed the problem of unsteady free convection over two-dimensional or axisymmetric bodies for step input in the surface temperature. They<sup>1-4</sup> ignored the curvature and displacement effects. Gupta and Pop<sup>5</sup> considered the problem of Elliot and included the curvature effects. The effects of both curvature and displacement have been included in the analysis of Arunachalam and Rajappa<sup>6</sup>, in which the surface temperature is a power function of time.

The aim of the present paper is to study the unsteady free convection flow past a two-dimensional or axisymmetric body heated impulsively and placed in an ambient fluid of temperature  $T_\infty$ . The input in the surface temperature is taken as an exponential function of time which represents the phenomenon of the sudden heating of the body. The application of the present theory for an unsteady free convection flow past a horizontal circular cylinder and a sphere is carried out to bring out the importance of curvature and displacement effects on heat transfer and skin friction.



## 2. STATEMENT OF THE PROBLEM

Consider an incompressible, transient, nondissipative constant property laminar boundary layer flow induced by the buoyancy force  $\rho \bar{g} \beta (T - T_\infty)$  over a hot two-dimensional or axisymmetric body whose temperature on the surface is

$$T_w(\bar{r}) = T_\infty + \Delta T e^{\bar{r}/t_0} \quad \dots(2)$$

where  $T_\infty$  is the undisturbed temperature of the ambient fluid which is at rest at infinity. The radius of curvature at the leading edge of the body is taken as characteristic length  $L$ ,  $\Delta T$  reference temperature and  $t_0$  the investigation time of flow. We have the buoyancy induced velocity  $U_c$  given by

$$U_c = (g\beta\Delta TL)^{1/2}.$$

In terms of these quantities

$$Gr^{1/2} = \frac{U_c L}{\nu}, F = \frac{\alpha t}{L^2}, \sigma = \frac{\nu}{\alpha} \text{ and } \epsilon = \sigma F_0 \sqrt{Gr} \quad \dots(3)$$

where  $\nu$  is the kinematic viscosity of the fluid,  $\alpha$  the thermal diffusion coefficient.  $Gr$ ,  $F_0$  and  $\sigma$  are the Grashof, Fourier and Prandtl numbers respectively.  $Gr$  plays an important role in free convection and  $F_0$  in unsteady flows.

In the case of unsteady viscous flows the parameter  $\sqrt{\nu t_0}/L$  plays an important role. We take

$$\sqrt{\nu t_0}/L = \epsilon \gamma \quad \dots(4)$$

where  $\gamma$  is a constant. When time  $t_0$  is small  $\sqrt{\nu t_0}/L$  is small and  $\epsilon$  is small.  $\gamma$  denotes the ratio of  $\sqrt{\nu t_0}/L$  to  $\sigma F_0 \sqrt{Gr}$  which is considered to be a constant of  $O(1)$ .

Using curvilinear coordinate system shown in Fig. 1 the governing equations for unsteady free convection over a curved surface stated in nondimensional coordinates are

$$\frac{\partial}{\partial x} (h_2 h_3 u) + \frac{\partial}{\partial y} (h_1 h_3 v) = 0 \quad \dots(5)$$

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{\partial u}{\partial t} + \epsilon \left( \frac{u}{h_1} \frac{\partial u}{\partial x} + \frac{v}{h_2} \frac{\partial u}{\partial y} + \frac{kuv}{h_1 h_2} \right) + \frac{1}{h_1} \frac{\partial p}{\partial x} \\ = AH \sin \theta - \frac{\gamma \epsilon^2}{h_2 h_3} \frac{\partial}{\partial y} (h_3 \zeta_3) \end{aligned} \quad \dots(6)$$

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{\partial v}{\partial t} + \epsilon \left( \frac{u}{h_1} \frac{\partial v}{\partial x} + \frac{v}{h_2} \frac{\partial v}{\partial y} - \frac{ku^2}{h_1 h_2} \right) + \frac{1}{h_2} \frac{\partial p}{\partial y} \\ = -AH \cos \theta + \frac{\gamma \epsilon^2}{h_1 h_3} \frac{\partial}{\partial x} (h_3 \zeta_3) \end{aligned} \quad \dots(7)$$

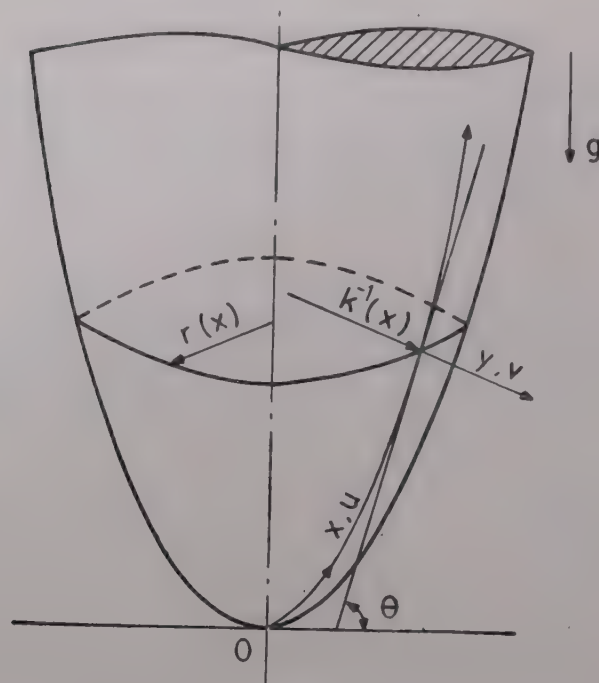


FIG. 1. Coordinate system.

$$\frac{\partial H}{\partial t} + \epsilon \left( \frac{u}{h_1} \frac{\partial H}{\partial x} + \frac{v}{h_2} \frac{\partial H}{\partial y} \right) = \frac{\gamma \epsilon^2}{\sigma h_1 h_3} \left[ \frac{\partial}{\partial x} \left( \frac{h_3}{h_1} \frac{\partial H}{\partial x} \right) + \frac{\partial}{\partial y} \left( h_1 h_3 \frac{\partial H}{\partial y} \right) \right] \quad \dots(8)$$

where

$$h_1 = 1 + ky, h_2 = 1, h_3 = (r + y \sin \theta)^2 \quad \dots(9)$$

$$\zeta_3 = - \left( \frac{\partial u}{\partial y} + \frac{ku}{h_1} - \frac{1}{h_1} \frac{\partial v}{\partial x} \right) \quad \dots(10)$$

$$A = \frac{g\beta \Delta T t_0}{U_e} = \epsilon, p = \frac{\bar{p} - p_\infty}{\epsilon^{-1} \rho U_e^2}, H = \frac{(T - T_\infty)}{\Delta T} \quad \dots(11)$$

$k$  is the curvature at any point.  $k$  and  $\theta$  are functions of  $x$  only.  $\zeta_3$  is the vorticity component. The buoyancy force is of the same order as the unsteady terms in the momentum equations. This implies that  $A$  is a constant of  $O(\epsilon)$ . This constant  $A$  has been taken as  $O(1)$  in the article of Arunachalam and Rajappa<sup>6</sup>. In the present problem the Navier-Stokes equations including the energy equation are solved using the fact that  $A$  is of  $O(\epsilon)$ . The index  $j = 0$  gives the two-dimensional flow and  $j = 1$  axisymmetric flow.

Introducing the Stokes stream function  $\psi$ , such that

$$u = \frac{1}{h_2 h_3} \frac{\partial \psi}{\partial y}, v = - \frac{1}{h_1 h_3} \frac{\partial \psi}{\partial x} \quad \dots(12)$$

the equation of continuity will automatically be satisfied. The boundary conditions to be satisfied are

$$\begin{aligned} t \leq 0 : u = 0 = v, H = 0 \text{ for all } y \\ t > 0 : u = 0 = v, H = e^t \text{ at } y = 0 \\ u \rightarrow 0, H \rightarrow 0 \text{ as } y \rightarrow \infty. \end{aligned} \quad \dots(13)$$

Since the problem is a singular perturbation one where the small parameter  $\epsilon$  is multiplying the highest derivative. One has to use the method of matched asymptotic expansions as given by Vandyke<sup>7</sup>, to solve the problem. For the outer flow field we assume that

$$\psi = \Psi_1 + \epsilon \Psi_2 + \dots, \quad \dots(14)$$

and similar expansions in capital letters for  $u$ ,  $v$ ,  $H$  and  $p$ . A regular perturbation of equations (5) to (8) due to equations (14) shows that the outer flow field is always inviscid and irrotational. Therefore from equations (10) and (12) we infer that  $\Psi_1, \Psi_2 \dots$  are solutions of

$$\frac{\partial}{\partial y} \left( \frac{h_1}{h_2 h_3} \frac{\partial \psi}{\partial y} \right) + \frac{\partial}{\partial x} \left( \frac{h_2}{h_1 h_3} \frac{\partial \psi}{\partial x} \right) = 0. \quad \dots(15)$$

For inner flow field we introduce an inner variable  $z$  as

$$z = y/\epsilon \quad \dots(16)$$

and expand the inner flow quantities as

$$\begin{aligned} u = u_1 + \epsilon u_2 + \dots, p = p_1 + \epsilon p_2 + \dots, H = H_1 + \epsilon H_2 + \dots, \\ v = \epsilon v_1 + \epsilon^2 v_2 + \dots, \psi = \epsilon \psi_1 + \epsilon^3 \psi_2 + \dots, \end{aligned} \quad \dots(17)$$

Comparing the like powers of  $\epsilon$ , we get from equations (5) to (8) the boundary layer equations to different orders :

First order equations are

$$\frac{\partial}{\partial x} (r' u_1) + \frac{\partial}{\partial z} (r' v_1) = 0 \quad \dots(18)$$

$$\frac{\partial u_1}{\partial t} + \frac{\partial p_1}{\partial x} = \gamma \frac{\partial^2 u_1}{\partial z^2} \quad \dots(19)$$

$$\frac{\partial p_1}{\partial z} = 0 \quad \dots(20)$$

$$\frac{\partial H_1}{\partial t} = \frac{\gamma}{\sigma} \frac{\partial^2 H_1}{\partial z^2}. \quad \dots(21)$$



Second order equations are

$$\frac{\partial}{\partial x} (r^j u_2 + jz u_1 \sin \theta) + \frac{\partial}{\partial z} (r^j v_2 + kr^j v_1 z + jz v_1 \sin \theta) = 0 \quad \dots(22)$$

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{\partial u_2}{\partial t} + u_1 \frac{\partial u_1}{\partial x} + v_1 \frac{\partial u_1}{\partial z} + \frac{\partial p_2}{\partial x} - kz \frac{\partial p_1}{\partial x} = H_1 \sin \theta \\ + \gamma \left[ \frac{\partial^2 u_2}{\partial z^2} + \left( k + \frac{j}{r} \sin \theta \right) \frac{\partial u_1}{\partial z} \right] \end{aligned} \quad \dots(23)$$

$$\frac{\partial p_2}{\partial z} = 0 \quad \dots(24)$$

$$\frac{\partial H_2}{\partial t} + u_1 \frac{\partial H_1}{\partial x} + v_1 \frac{\partial H_1}{\partial z} = \frac{\gamma}{\sigma} \left[ \frac{\partial^2 H_2}{\partial z^2} + \left( k + \frac{j}{r} \sin \theta \right) \frac{\partial H_1}{\partial z} \right] \dots(25)$$

Third order equations are

$$\frac{\partial}{\partial x} (r^j u_3 + jz u_2 \sin \theta) + \frac{\partial}{\partial z} (r^j v_3 + jk v_1 z^2 \sin \theta + r^j z k v_2 + jz v_2 \sin \theta) = 0 \quad \dots(26)$$

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{\partial u_3}{\partial t} + u_1 \frac{\partial u_2}{\partial x} + u_2 \frac{\partial u_1}{\partial x} - kzu_1 \frac{\partial u_1}{\partial x} + v_1 \frac{\partial u_2}{\partial z} + v_2 \frac{\partial u_1}{\partial z} + ku_1 v_1 \\ + \frac{\partial p_3}{\partial x} - kz \frac{\partial p_2}{\partial x} = H_2 \sin \theta + \gamma \left[ \frac{\partial^2 u_3}{\partial z^2} + \left( k + \frac{j}{r} \sin \theta \right) \frac{\partial u_2}{\partial z} \right. \\ \left. - \left( k^2 + \frac{j}{r} \sin^2 \theta \right) z \frac{\partial u_1}{\partial z} + k \frac{j}{r} \sin \theta u_1 - \frac{\partial^2 v_1}{\partial z \partial x} \right] \end{aligned} \quad \dots(27)$$

$$\frac{\partial v_1}{\partial t} - ku_1^2 + \frac{\partial p_3}{\partial z} = -H_1 \cos \theta - \gamma \left[ \frac{\partial^2 u_1}{\partial x \partial z} + \frac{j}{r} \frac{dr}{dx} \frac{\partial u_1}{\partial z} \right] \quad \dots(28)$$

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{\partial H_3}{\partial t} + u_1 \frac{\partial H_2}{\partial x} + u_2 \frac{\partial H_1}{\partial x} - kzu_1 \frac{\partial H_1}{\partial x} + v_1 \frac{\partial H_2}{\partial z} + v_2 \frac{\partial H_1}{\partial z} \\ = \frac{\gamma}{\sigma} \left[ \frac{\partial^2 H_1}{\partial x^2} + \left( k + \frac{j}{r} \sin \theta \right) \frac{\partial H_2}{\partial z} - \left( \frac{j}{r} \sin^2 \theta + k^2 \right) \right. \\ \left. \frac{\partial H_1}{\partial z} + \frac{\partial^2 H_3}{\partial z^2} + jr \frac{dr}{dx} \frac{\partial H_1}{\partial x} \right] \end{aligned} \quad \dots(29)$$

The equations have to be solved subject to the boundary conditions in equation (13) and matching conditions which come from the outer flow solution.

### 3. SOLUTION OF THE PROBLEM

#### First Approximation

As the ambient fluid is at rest and temperature does not vary across the boundary layer at a large distance from the surface of the body, the first order outer flow quantities are

$$p_1 = 0, H_1 = 0, \Psi_1 = 0. \quad \dots(30)$$

As a consequence of equation (20) noting that  $p_1 = p_1(x, z)$  and pressure does not vary across the boundary layer, we have

$$\frac{\partial p_1}{\partial x} = \left( \frac{\partial P_1}{\partial x} \right)_{y=0} = 0. \quad \dots(31)$$

On introducing a similarity variable  $\eta$  as

$$\eta = z \left( \frac{\sigma}{\gamma} \right)^{1/2} \quad \dots(32)$$

and seeking solutions  $H_1$  and  $u_1$  in the form

$$H_1(x, \eta, t) = e^t Q_1(\eta) \quad \dots(33)$$

$$u_1(x, \eta, t) = e^t f_1(\eta). \quad \dots(34)$$

Equations (21) and (19) reduces to the form

$$Q_1'' - Q_1 = 0 \quad \dots(35)$$

$$\sigma f_1'' - f_1 = 0 \quad \dots(36)$$

where primes denote differentiation with respect to  $\eta$ . The boundary and matching conditions are

$$Q_1(0) = 1, Q_1(\infty) = 0 \quad \dots(37)$$

$$f_1(0) = 0 = f_1(\infty). \quad \dots(38)$$

The solution of (35) subject to (37) is

$$Q_1(\eta) = e^{-\eta}. \quad \dots(39)$$

The solution of (36) subject to (38) is

$$f_1(\eta) = 0. \quad \dots(40)$$

On introducing the stream function

$$\psi_1 \text{ as } u = r^{-1} \frac{\partial \psi_1}{\partial z}, v = -r^{-1} \frac{\partial \psi_1}{\partial x}.$$

We have

$$v_1(x, \eta, t) = 0 \text{ and } \psi_1(x, \eta, t) = 0. \quad \dots(41)$$

The second order outer flow quantities are

$$p_2 = 0, H_2 = 0, \psi_2 = 0. \quad \dots(42)$$

Second order inner flow gives

$$\frac{\partial p_2}{\partial x} = \left( \frac{\partial P_2}{\partial x} \right)_{y=0} = 0. \quad \dots(43)$$

Equation (25) after simplification becomes

$$\frac{\partial H_2}{\partial t} - \frac{\gamma}{\sigma} \frac{\partial^2 H_2}{\partial z^2} = \left( \frac{\gamma}{\sigma} \right)^{1/2} \left( k + \frac{j}{r} \sin \theta \right) e^t Q_1'(\eta). \quad \dots(44)$$

Seeking a solution for  $H_2$  in the form

$$H_2(x, \eta, t) = \left( \frac{\gamma}{\sigma} \right)^{1/2} \left( k + \frac{j}{r} \sin \theta \right) e^t Q_2(\eta).$$

Equation (44) becomes

$$Q_2'' - Q_2 = -Q_1' \quad \dots(45)$$

$$Q_2(0) = 0 = Q_2(\infty). \quad \dots(46)$$

The solution of (45) subject to (46) is

$$Q_2(\eta) = -\frac{\eta}{2} e^{-\eta}. \quad \dots(47)$$

Equation (23) after simplification takes the form

$$\frac{\partial u_2}{\partial t} - \gamma \frac{\partial^2 u_2}{\partial z^2} = e^t \sin \theta Q_1. \quad \dots(48)$$

Seeking a solution for  $u_2$  in the form

$$u_2(x, \eta, t) = e^t \sin \theta f(\eta)$$

equation (48) becomes

$$\sigma f'' - f = -Q_1 \quad \dots(49)$$

$$f(0) = 0 = f(\infty). \quad \dots(50)$$

The solution of (49) subject to (50) is

$$\begin{aligned} f(\eta) &= \frac{\eta}{2} e^{-\eta}, \text{ for } \sigma = 1 \\ &= \frac{1}{(\sigma - 1)} (e^{-\eta_1} - e^{-\eta}), \text{ for } \sigma \neq 1, \eta_1 = \eta/\sqrt{\sigma}. \end{aligned} \quad \dots(51)$$

From eqn. (22), introducing the stream function  $\psi_2$  as

$$u_2 = r^{-j} \frac{\partial \psi_2}{\partial z}, \quad v_2 = -r^{-j} \frac{\partial \psi_2}{\partial x}$$

we have

$$v_2(x, \eta, t) = -\frac{1}{r^j} \left( \frac{\gamma}{\sigma} \right)^{1/2} e^t \frac{\partial}{\partial x} (r^j \sin \theta) \phi(\eta) \quad \dots(52)$$



$$\psi_2(x, \eta, t) = \left(\frac{\gamma}{\sigma}\right)^{1/2} e^t r^j \sin \theta \phi(\eta) \quad \dots(53)$$

where

$$\begin{aligned} \phi(\eta) &= \int_0^\eta f(x) dx \\ &= \frac{1}{2} [1 - e^{-\eta} - \eta e^{-\eta}], \text{ for } \sigma = 1 \\ &= \frac{1}{(\sigma - 1)} [\sqrt{\sigma} - \sqrt{\sigma} e^{-\eta_1} + e^{-\eta} - 1], \text{ for } \sigma \neq 1, \eta_1 = \eta/\sqrt{\sigma}. \end{aligned} \quad \dots(54)$$

### Third order outer flow

Since  $v_2$  does not vanish as  $\eta \rightarrow \infty$ , the second order inner solution induces a correction in the outer inviscid solution specified by the stream function  $\psi_3(x, y, t)$ . Since  $\Psi_2(x, y, t)$  is zero, a matching of  $\Psi$  as  $y \rightarrow 0$  with  $\epsilon^2 \psi_2$  to the second order of  $\epsilon$  as  $\eta \rightarrow \infty$ , gives

$$\Psi_3(x, 0, t) = e^t r^j \left(\frac{\gamma}{\sigma}\right)^{1/2} \sin \theta \phi(\infty) \quad \dots(55)$$

where

$$\phi(\infty) = \frac{1}{\sqrt{\sigma} + 1}. \quad \dots(56)$$

This signifies an induced outer flow by the boundary layer,  $\Psi_3$  satisfies eqns. (15) and (55), and vanishes as  $y \rightarrow \infty$ . Hence solving for  $\Psi_3$ , and using eqn. (12), we can get  $U_3(x, y, t)$  so that

$$U_3(x, 0, t) = e^t D(x) \quad \dots(57)$$

where  $D(x)$  is a function of  $x$ . Matching the inner and outer expressions for the  $x$ -component of velocity and pressure gradient to  $O(\epsilon^2)$ , we get as  $\eta \rightarrow \infty$ ,

$$u_3 = e^t D(x) \quad \dots(58)$$

$$\frac{\partial p_3}{\partial x} = -e^t D(x). \quad \dots(59)$$

### Third order inner flow

Rewriting eqn. (27) in the form

$$\frac{\partial u_3}{\partial t} - \gamma \frac{\partial^2 u_3}{\partial z^2} = e^t S_1 \left[ k(Q_1 + Q_2 + \sigma f') + \frac{j}{r} \sin \theta (Q_2 + \sigma f') + \frac{D(x)}{S_1} \right] \quad \dots(60)$$

where

$$S_1(x) = \left(\frac{\gamma}{\sigma}\right)^{1/2} \sin \theta. \quad \dots(61)$$

Seeking a solution for  $u_3$  as

$$u_3(x, \eta, t) = e^t \left[ S_1 k F_k(\eta) + S_1 \frac{j}{r} \sin \theta F_j(\eta) + D(x) F_D(\eta) \right]$$

where

$$\begin{aligned} F_k(\eta) &= \frac{\eta}{2} e^{-\eta} - \frac{\eta^2}{4} e^{-\eta}, \text{ for } \sigma = 1 \\ &= \frac{1}{(\sigma - 1)} \left[ \frac{-\sigma^3 + 2\sigma^2 + \sigma - 1}{(\sigma - 1)} e^{-\eta_1} - e^{-\eta} - \frac{\sigma}{(\sigma - 1)} e^{-\eta} - \frac{\eta}{2} e^{-\eta_1} \right] \\ &\quad - \frac{e^{-\eta}}{2} (\eta + \eta\sigma - 2\sigma), \text{ for } \sigma \neq 1, \eta_1 = \frac{\eta}{\sqrt{\sigma}} \end{aligned} \quad \dots(62)$$

$$\begin{aligned} F_j(\eta) &= -\frac{\eta^2}{4} e^{-\eta}, \text{ for } \sigma = 1 \\ &= \frac{1}{(\sigma - 1)} \left[ \frac{\sigma^2(2 - \sigma)}{(\sigma - 1)} e^{-\eta_1} - \frac{\sigma}{(\sigma - 1)} e^{-\eta} - \frac{\eta}{2} e^{-\eta_1} \right] \\ &\quad - \frac{e^{-\eta}}{2} (\eta + \eta\sigma - 2\sigma), \text{ for } \sigma \neq 1, \eta_1 = \frac{\eta}{\sqrt{\sigma}} \end{aligned} \quad \dots(63)$$

$$\begin{aligned} F_D(\eta) &= 1 - e^{-\eta}, \text{ for } \sigma = 1 \\ &= 1 - e^{-\eta_1}, \text{ for } \sigma \neq 1, \eta_1 = \frac{\eta}{\sqrt{\sigma}} \end{aligned} \quad \dots(64)$$

These equations form a set of universal velocity profiles, where the suffix  $k$  denotes the longitudinal curvature effect,  $j$  denotes the transverse curvature effect and  $D$  denotes the displacement effect.

The energy equation (29) after possible simplifications takes the form

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{\partial H_3}{\partial t} - \frac{\gamma}{\sigma} \frac{\partial^2 H_3}{\partial z^2} &= e^{2t} \left( k + \frac{j}{r} \sin \theta \right) \cos \theta \phi(\eta) Q'_1 + e^t \left( \frac{\gamma}{\sigma} \right)^{1/2} \\ &\quad \left[ k^2 (Q'_2 - \eta Q'_1) + \left( \frac{j}{r} \sin \theta \right)^2 Q'_2 - j \left( \frac{\sin \theta}{r} \right)^2 \right. \\ &\quad \left. \eta Q'_1 + 2k \frac{j}{r} \sin \theta Q'_2 \right]. \end{aligned} \quad \dots(65)$$

Seeking a solution for  $H_3$  in the form

$$\begin{aligned} H_3(x, \eta, t) &= e^{2t} \left( k + \frac{j}{r} \sin \theta \right) \cos \theta g_1(\eta) + e^t \left( \frac{\gamma}{\sigma} \right)^{1/2} \left[ k^2 g_2(\eta) \right. \\ &\quad + \left( \frac{j}{r} \sin \theta \right)^2 g_3(\eta) + j \left( \frac{\sin \theta}{r} \right)^2 g_4(\eta) \\ &\quad \left. + k \frac{j}{r} \sin \theta g_5(\eta) \right] \end{aligned}$$

where

$$\begin{aligned}
 g_1(\eta) &= \frac{5}{4} e^{-\sqrt{2}\eta} - \frac{e^{-\eta}}{2} - \frac{\eta}{4} e^{-2\eta} - \frac{e^{-2\eta}}{2}, \text{ for } \sigma = 1 \\
 &= \frac{1}{(\sigma - 1)} \left[ \frac{-(3 + 4\sqrt{\sigma} - 7\sigma)}{\sqrt{2}(1 + 2\sqrt{\sigma} - \sigma)} e^{-\sqrt{2}\eta} + \frac{e^{-2\eta}}{2} + (1 - \sqrt{\sigma}) e^{-\eta} \right. \\
 &\quad \left. - \frac{\sigma\sqrt{\sigma}}{(1 + 2\sqrt{\sigma} - \sigma)} e^{-\left(1 + \frac{1}{\sqrt{\sigma}}\right)\eta} \right], \text{ for } \sigma \neq 1 \quad \dots (66)
 \end{aligned}$$

$$g_2(\eta) = \frac{\eta}{8} e^{-\eta} (1 + 3\eta) \quad \dots (67)$$

$$g_3(\eta) = \frac{\eta}{8} e^{-\eta} (\eta - 1) \quad \dots (68)$$

$$g_4(\eta) = \frac{\eta}{4} e^{-\eta} (\eta + 1) \quad \dots (69)$$

$$g_5(\eta) = \frac{\eta}{4} e^{-\eta} (\eta - 1) \quad \dots (70)$$

where  $g_1$  is the convection effect on the curved surface,  $g_2, g_3, g_4$  and  $g_5$  are the effects proportional to the curvature.

#### 4. SKIN FRICTION AND HEAT TRANSFER

Skin friction coefficient  $C_f$  is given by the formula

$$C_f = \frac{\left( \mu \frac{\partial \bar{u}}{\partial y} \right)_w}{\left( \frac{1}{2} \rho U_c^2 \right)}.$$

We have

$$\begin{aligned}
 C_f (F_0 Gr)^{1/2} &= 2\epsilon e^t \sin \theta \left\{ f'(0) + \left( \frac{\gamma}{\sigma} \right)^{1/2} \epsilon \left[ kF'_k(0) + \frac{j}{r} \sin \theta F'_j(0) \right. \right. \\
 &\quad \left. \left. + \frac{D(x)}{S_1} F'_D(0) \right] \right\} \quad \dots (71)
 \end{aligned}$$

where suffix  $w$  denotes the value of the expression at the wall. If  $q_w$  denotes the heat transfer rate at the surface and  $Nu$ , the Nusselt number based on the characteristic length  $L$  of the flow, then

$$Nu = \frac{q_w L}{K(T_w - T_\infty)} \text{ where } q_w = - \left( K \frac{\partial T}{\partial y} \right)_w.$$



Hence

$$\begin{aligned}
 Nu F_0^{\frac{1}{2}} = & - \left\{ Q_1' (0) + \epsilon \left( \frac{\gamma}{\sigma} \right)^{\frac{1}{2}} \left( k + \frac{j}{r} \sin \theta \right) Q_2' (0) \right. \\
 & + \epsilon^2 \left[ e' \left( k + \frac{j}{r} \sin \theta \right) \cos \theta g_1' (0) \right. \\
 & + \left( \frac{\gamma}{\sigma} \right)^{\frac{1}{2}} \left[ k^2 g_2' (0) + \left( \frac{j \sin \theta}{r} \right)^2 g_3' (0) + j \left( \frac{\sin \theta}{r} \right)^2 g_4' (0) \right. \\
 & \left. \left. \left. + k \frac{j}{r} \sin \theta g_5' (0) \right] \right] \right\} + O(\epsilon^3). \quad \dots(72)
 \end{aligned}$$

## 5. APPLICATIONS

The present theory is applied to the unsteady buoyancy induced two-dimensional flow around a horizontal circular cylinder and axisymmetric flow around a sphere. Taking radius as the characteristic length  $L$ , and introducing the polar coordinates  $(R, \theta)$  to get the outer flow, we have in the case of cylinder

$$j = 0, k = 1, h_1 = 1 + y = R, h_2 = 1, h_3 = 1, x = \theta. \quad \dots(73)$$

So, eqn. (15) takes the form

$$\frac{\partial}{\partial R} \left( R \frac{\partial \psi}{\partial R} \right) + \frac{\partial}{\partial x} \left( \frac{1}{R} \frac{\partial \psi}{\partial \psi} \right) = 0. \quad \dots(74)$$

Since  $\Psi_3$  satisfies eqns. (74) and (55) with  $j = 0$  and  $x = \theta$ , and vanishes as  $R \rightarrow \infty$ , we have

$$\Psi_3(x, R, t) = e' \left( \frac{\gamma}{\sigma} \right)^{\frac{1}{2}} \sin x \phi(\infty)/R. \quad \dots(75)$$

Therefore

$$U_3(x, 0, t) = \left( \frac{\partial \Psi_3}{\partial R} \right)_{R \rightarrow 1} = - e' \left( \frac{\gamma}{\sigma} \right)^{\frac{1}{2}} \sin x \phi(\infty) \quad \dots(76)$$

and

$$D(x) = - \left( \frac{\gamma}{\sigma} \right)^{\frac{1}{2}} \sin x \phi(\infty). \quad \dots(77)$$

In the case of a sphere also we arrive at the same expression for  $D(x)$  given in eqn. (77), where we have

$$\begin{aligned}
 j = 1, k = 1, h_1 = 1 + y = R, h_2 = 1, \theta = x, r = \sin x, \\
 h_3 = (1 + y) \sin x = R \sin x. \quad \dots(78)
 \end{aligned}$$

The average Nusselt number  $Nu$  based on diameter  $d$  of the cylinder is

$$\begin{aligned}\overline{Nu_c} &= \frac{\bar{h}d}{K} = \frac{1}{2\pi} \frac{d}{K} \int_0^{2\pi} h dx = \frac{1}{2\pi} \int_0^{2\pi} Nu dx \\ &= -F_0^{-1/2} \left\{ -1 + \frac{\epsilon}{2\sqrt{\sigma}} \left[ -1 + \frac{\epsilon}{4} \right] \right\}.\end{aligned}\quad \dots(79)$$

A similar averaging over the surface of the sphere will lead to the result

$$\overline{Nu_s} = -F_0^{-1/2} \left[ -1 - \frac{\epsilon}{\sqrt{\sigma}} \right]. \quad \dots(80)$$

## 6. DISCUSSION

It is to be noted that the first order inner and outer solution of the velocity distribution are identically zero. This shows that in free convection flows the velocity distribution is of  $O(\epsilon)$ . The velocity and temperature distributions are plotted in Figs. 2 to 5 for a typical value of Prandtl number  $\sigma = 1$ . Figure 2 shows the second order velocity profiles  $f$  and  $\phi$  which indicate respectively the variation of  $u_2$  and  $v_2$  across the boundary layer.  $u_2$  reaches maximum when  $\eta = 1.2$ . Figure 3 shows the third order velocity profiles.  $F_D$  denotes the contribution to the velocity due to displacement on the boundary layer. Its effect is very large compared with the curvature effects. The curvature contributions  $F_k$  and  $F_j$  are of  $O(10^{-1})$ , whereas the contribution of  $F_D$  is of  $O(1)$ .

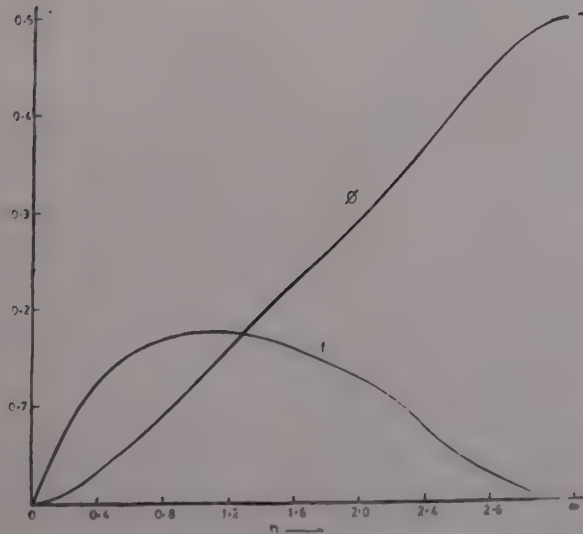


FIG. 2. Second order velocity profiles.

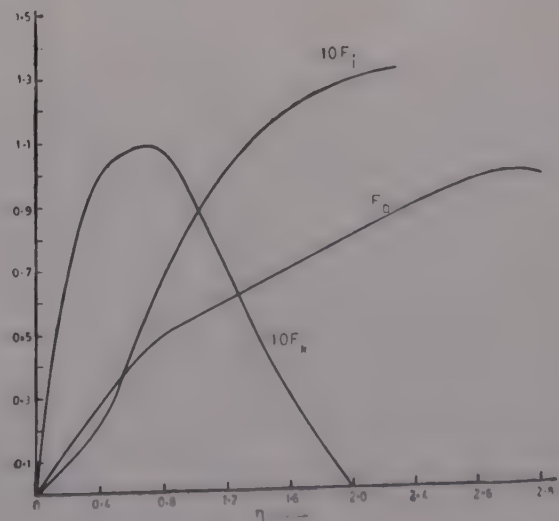


FIG. 3. Third order velocity profiles.

Figure 4 shows a plot of temperature profiles.  $Q_1$  is the first order contribution which is due to transient conduction near the surface initially.  $Q_2$  is the curvature effect. The terms proportional to  $k$  and  $j$  in the temperature distribution denote the longitudinal and transverse curvature effects. There is no effect due to the presence

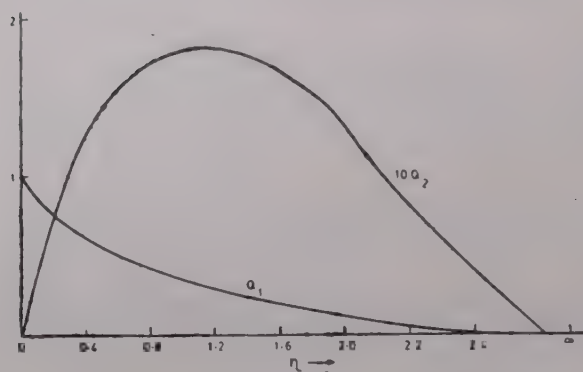


FIG. 4. First and second order temperature profiles.

of buoyancy force on the temperature even in the second order inner flow, since the first order convection velocities  $u_1$  and  $v_1$  vanish identically.

The temperature profiles of the third order solutions  $g_1, g_2, g_3, g_4$  and  $g_5$  are shown in Fig. 5.  $g_1$  is the effect due to convection on the curved surface which has

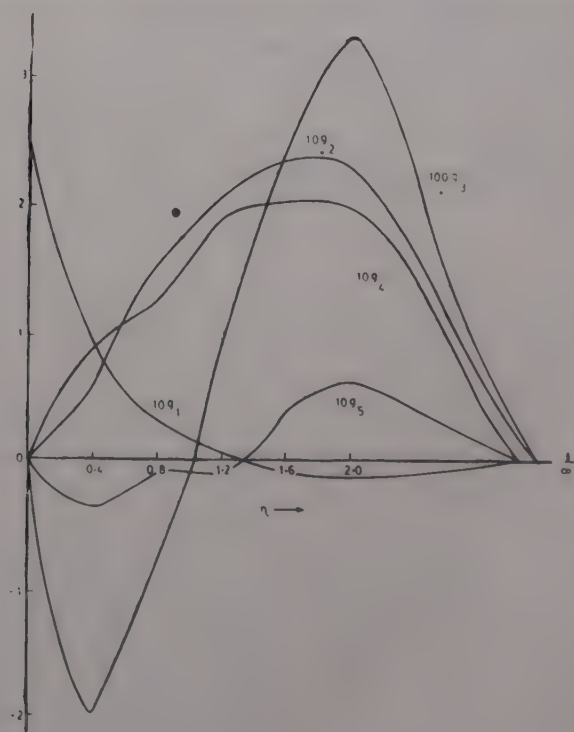


FIG. 5. Third order temperature profiles.

both longitudinal and transverse curvature.  $g_2, g_3, g_4$  and  $g_5$  are due to an interaction of the conduction terms and are independent of Prandtl number  $\sigma$ .

The variation of skin friction for a fixed value of  $t = 0.5$  is shown in Fig. 6. From equation (71) it is to be noted that the terms (III order) proportional to  $k, j$  and



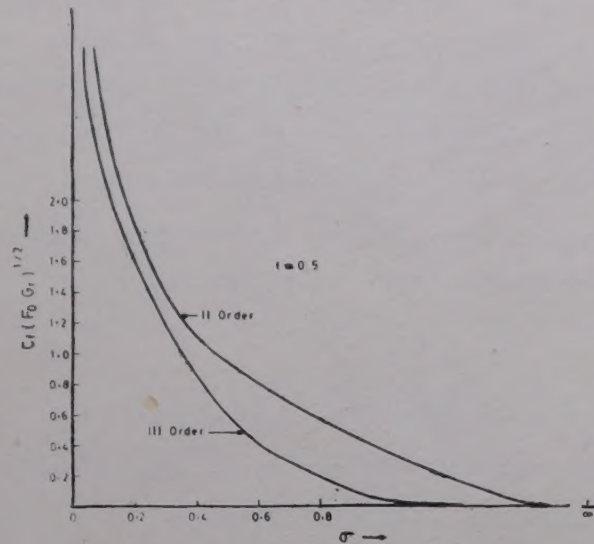


FIG. 6.  $C_f (F_0 G_r)^{1/2}$  versus  $\sigma$  in the case of cylinder.

$D$  denote the contribution to skin friction due to longitudinal curvature, transverse curvature and displacement speed. These effect reduce the skin friction. As  $t$  increases the skin friction increases.

A plot of Nusselt number versus Prandtl number is shown in Fig. 7. First and second order terms are independent of time. When the Prandtl number is very large higher order terms tend to zero, so that the first order solution becomes the asymptotic solution for large  $\sigma$ . As  $t$  increases rate of heat transfer increases. There is an increase in heat transfer rate at the surface of the body due to curvature.

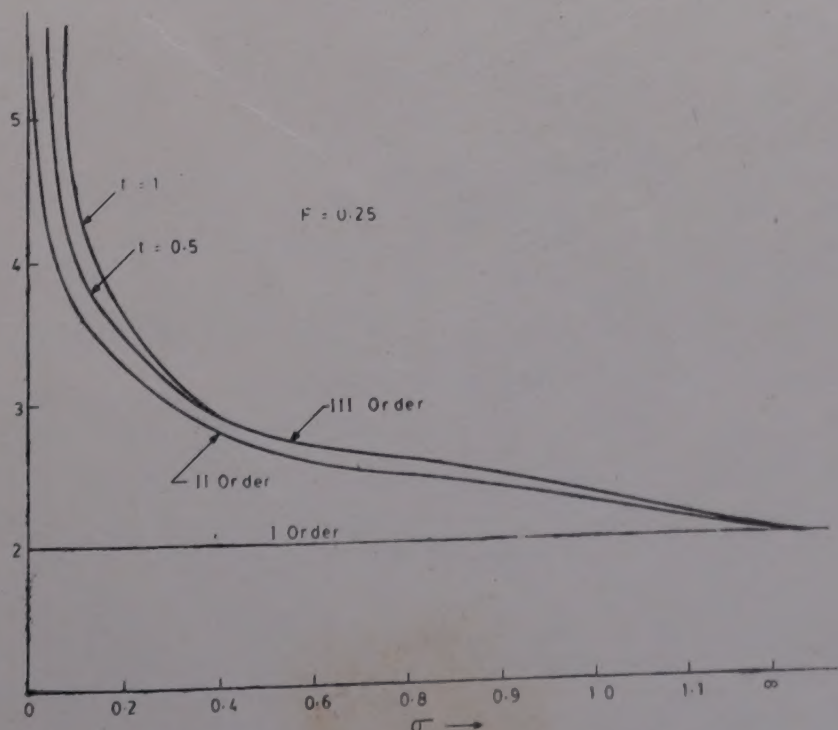


FIG. 7.  $Nu$  versus  $\sigma$  in the case of cylinder.

In the case of a circular cylinder and a sphere the displacement speed  $D(x)$  given in eqn. (77) when substituted in eqn. (71) will give the skin friction coefficient  $C_f$ . From eqns. (79) and (80) it is to be noted that the average Nusselt number are functions of the Prandtl number  $\sigma$ . As  $\sigma \rightarrow \infty$ , the higher order effects vanish leaving the first order terms which is due to pure conduction.

The present analysis is applicable as in the case of cylinder and sphere to any two-dimensional or axisymmetric body whose curvatures and displacement speeds are known.

#### ACKNOWLEDGEMENT

The author's are grateful to the referee for his valuable suggestions. The first author is thankful to U.G.C. for financial support.

#### REFERENCES

1. H. K. Mohanty, *Acta Mech.* **15** (1972), 275.
2. E. R. Menold, and K. T. Yang, *J. Appl. Mech.* **29** (1962), 124.
3. R. J. Goldstein, and D. G. Briggs, *J. Heat Transfer* **86** (1964), 490.
4. L. Elliot, *Q. Jl Mech. Appl. Math.* **23** (1970), 153.
5. A. S. Gupta, and I. Pop, *Phys. Fluids* **20** (1977), 162.
6. M. Arunachalam, and N. R. Rajappa, *Acta Mech.* **35** (1980), 231.
7. M. Vandyke, *Perturbation Methods in Fluid Mechanics*. Academic Press, New York, 1964.
8. H. Schlichting, *Boundary Layer Theory*. McGraw-Hill Book Co., Inc., New York, 1979.
9. M. Vandyke, *J. Fluid Mech.* **14** (1962), 121.



## SUGGESTIONS TO CONTRIBUTORS

The INDIAN JOURNAL OF PURE AND APPLIED MATHEMATICS is devoted primarily to original research in pure and applied mathematics.

Manuscripts should be typewritten, double-spaced with sufficient margins (including abstracts, references etc.) on one side of durable white paper. The initial page should contain the title followed by author's name and full mailing address. The text should include only as much as is needed to provide a background for the particular material covered. Manuscripts should be submitted in triplicate.

The author should provide a short abstract, in triplicate, not exceeding 250 words, summarizing the highlights of the principal findings covered in the paper and the scope of research.

References should be cited in the text by the arabic numbers in superior. List of references should be arranged in the arabic numbers, author's name, abbreviation of Journal, Volume number (Year) page number, as in the sample citation given below :

### For Periodicals

1. R. H. Fox, *Fund. Math.* 34 (1947) 278.

### For Books

2. H. Rund, *The Differential Geometry of Finsler Spaces*, Springer-Verlag, Berlin, (1973) p. 283.

Abbreviations for the titles of the periodicals should, in general, conform to the *World List of Scientific Periodicals*.

All mathematical expressions should be written clearly including the distinction between capital and small letters. Clear distinction between upper and lower cases of c, p, k, z, s, should be made while writing the expression in hand. Also distinguish between the letters such as 'Oh' and 'zero'; l(el) and 1 (one); v, V and  $\nu$  (Greek nu);  $r$  and  $\gamma$  (Greek gamma);  $\chi$ , X and  $\chi$  (Greek chi); k, K and  $\kappa$  (Greek kappa); Greek letter lambda ( $\Lambda$ ) and symbol for vector product ( $\wedge$ ); Greek letter epsilon ( $\epsilon$ ) and symbol for 'is an element of' ( $\in$ ). The equation numbers are to be placed at the right-hand side of the page. The name of the Greek letter or symbol should be written in the margin the first time it is used. Superscripts and subscripts should be simple and should be placed accurately.

Line drawings should be made with India ink on white drawing paper or tracing paper. Letterings should be clear and large. Photographic prints should be glossy with strong contrast. All illustrations must be numbered consecutively in the order in which they are mentioned in the text and should be referred to as Fig. or Figs. Legends to figures should be typed on a separate sheet and attached at the end of the manuscript.

Tables should be typed separately from the text and placed at the end of the manuscript. Table headings should be short but clearly descriptive.

Proofs should be corrected immediately on receipt and returned to the Editor. If a large number of corrections are made in the proof, the author should pay towards composition charges. In case, the author desires to withdraw his paper, he should pay towards the composition charges, if the same is already done.

For each paper, the authors will receive 50 reprints free of cost. Order for extra reprints should be sent with corrected page proofs.

Manuscripts, in triplicate, should be submitted to the Editor of Publications, *Indian Journal of Pure and Applied Mathematics*, Indian National Science Academy, Bahadur Shah Zafar Marg, New Delhi 110002 (India).



## INDIAN JOURNAL OF PURE AND APPLIED MATHEMATICS

No. 8

August 1988

Volume 19

## CONTENTS

	<i>Page</i>
Fixed and periodic points under set-valued mappings <i>by</i> KALISHANKAR TIWARY and B. K. LAHIRI ... ..	717
On a general class of abstract functional Integrodifferential equations <i>by</i> M. B. DHAKNE and B. G. PACHPATTE ... ..	728
On extension of maps in topological spaces <i>by</i> P. THANGAVELU ...	747
On minimal pairwise Hausdorff bitopological spaces <i>by</i> C. G. KARIOFILLIS	751
Certain classes of $p$ -valent functions with negative coefficients II <i>by</i> M. K. AOUF ... ..	761
Some quadratic transformations of basic hypergeometric series and identities in Ramanujan's 'Lost' note book <i>by</i> A. VERMA and V. K. JAIN ...	768
Unsteady Laminar boundary layer forced flow over a moving wall with a magnetic field <i>by</i> C. D. SURMA DEVI, H. S. TAKHAR and G. NATH	786
Convection in a stratified flow in an inclined porous channel <i>by</i> S. RAMAKRISHNA, S. SREENADH and P. V. ARUNACHALAM ...	803
Transient free convection flow around two-dimensional or axisymmetric bodies <i>by</i> C. INDIRA and M. ARUNACHALAM ... ..	812